

## THE “GAP” FACT

A Biblical Exposition of a Flood as the result of Lucifer’s sin

In light of 2 Timothy 2:15  
“rightly dividing the word of truth”

By Perry Demopoulos  
Th.M.

(Missionary to Ukraine and Former Soviet Russia since 1992)

**Note:** All quotations and verse references are taken from the Authorized Version of the King James Bible (1611).

The following exegesis will be done without any help of any other sources other than the Authorized Version of the King James Bible 1611 in the international language of English. We say that without any apologies to any and all Hebrew and Greek professors and ‘professional’ students of any Hebrew and Greek languages. We say that without any apologies to any Fundamentalist, or Neo-Evangelical who claims to believe in the fundamentals of the Bible, and yet when forced to prove his teaching will turn to another source of information, whether it be tradition, philosophy, a dictionary, or Greek or Hebrew Lexicon.

Let “**the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God...**” speak to this Laodicean (“rights of the people”) period of the church age, in the absolute authority of the preserved, word-perfect, holy scriptures, the HOLY BIBLE; the Authorized, King James Bible (1611).

### Table of Contents

Preface.....	p.4
Chapter 1 – False Accusations by the Non-Gap Theorists .....	p.7
Summary.....	p.10
Chapter 2 – Stumbling Block and Bone of Contention – Romans 5:12.....	p.12
Non-Gap Theorist Explanation of Creation.....	p.13
Biblical Revelation of the words “Everything” and Noah’s Flood ...	p.15
The Gap Fact and the “fish” and the “sea”.....	p.16
Chapter 3 – Root of the Problem.....	p.17
Destructive Implications.....	p.21
Chapter 4 – Eve’s Sin.....	p. 22
Eve was deceived.....	p. 23
“Deceived” and “Evil”.....	p. 23
“deceived” and “pride”.....	p. 24

Eve was beguiled.....	p. 25
Eve’s sin of omission.....	p. 28
The “branch” of “ <b>sin</b> ” and “ <b>death</b> ”.....	p. 31
“ <b>In your sins</b> ”.....	p. 32
Chapter 5 – Sin Existed Even Before Adam and Eve Were Created.....	p. 33
“ <b>Evil</b> ”.....	p. 33
Darkness is a result of God Judging Sin.....	p. 34
Why all the Cross-Reference Searching of the Scriptures?.....	p. 39
Chapter 6 – The Fall of Satan.....	p. 42
Pre-Adamite Eden (Ezekiel 28:13).....	p. 43
The Time of Lucifer’s Fall.....	p. 43
The Mountain of God (Ezekiel 28:16).....	p. 44
“ <b>the midst</b> ” “ <b>fire</b> ”.....	p. 44
When Sin Originated.....	p. 47
When Did God Make Hell.....	p. 49
Chapter 7 – “ <b>the earth was without form and void</b> ”.....	p. 49
Biblical Methods of Interpretation vs. Man’s explanation.....	p. 50
Context makes a big difference.....	p. 50
Chapter 8 – More Gaps “And” (Gen. 1:2) and the Gap Fact.....	p. 54
Rightly Dividing and More Biblical Facts.....	p. 55
Rightly Dividing and Biblical GAPS.....	p. 57
“ <b>And</b> ”.....	p. 56
“ <i>Was</i> ” means became”.....	p. 57
“ <b>without form</b> ” and “ <b>form</b> ”.....	p. 59
“ <b>Void</b> ”.....	p. 61
“ <b>Darkness</b> ”.....	p. 64
“ <b>Darkness</b> ” and God’s Judgment on Sin and the Cross.....	p. 71
“ <b>Darkness</b> ” and “ <b>Evil</b> ”.....	p. 71
“ <b>Death</b> ” and “ <b>Darkness</b> ”.....	p. 72
“ <b>Darkness</b> ” and “ <b>Judgment</b> ”.....	p. 73
“ <b>Darkness</b> ” “ <b>Death</b> ” and the “ <b>Workers of Iniquity</b> ”.....	p. 75
“ <b>The Workers of Iniquity</b> ” and “ <b>Crooked</b> ”.....	p. 76
What does the Apostle Paul say about “ <b>darkness?</b> ”.....	p. 77
“ <b>Darkness was upon the Face of the Deep</b> ”.....	p. 77
Chapter 9 – My Thoughts are not Your Thoughts and “ <b>the Deep</b> ”.....	p. 80
Chapter 10 – Adam and His Fall.....	p. 85
The Doctrine of Federal Headship.....	p. 87
Death, judgment and “ <b>after that</b> ”.....	p. 91
Chapter 11 – The sons of God and the Pre-Adamic Race.....	p. 93

Time period in which the sons of God fell and first become “gods” ...	p. 94
<b>“The foundations of the Earth”</b> .....	p. 95
Different Periods of the Sons of God.....	p. 98
Chapter 12 <b>“Replenish”</b> .....	p. 101
Chapter 13 – More Differences <b>“heaven”</b> and <b>“heavens”</b> .....	p. 107
<b>“Generation(s)”</b> .....	p. 107
Generation means beginnings and successions.....	p. 109
Chapter 14 – 2 Peter 3.....	p. 111
Differences Between the Two Floods.....	p. 116
History Repeats Itself.....	p. 117
The Biblical Principle of Numerics.....	p. 118
The Number 13.....	p. 118
Revelation 21 and the <b>“...first earth...”</b> .....	p. 119
God’s “Strange” Way of Counting.....	p. 119
Different successions of world powers.....	p.120
First through the Third world power.....	p. 120
Application.....	p. 121
Establishing Every Word.....	p.122
The Devil’s Cords.....	p.125
Chapter 15 – Who and What is Leviathan?.....	p. 127
Where is his dwelling place?.....	p. 127
What Does He Look Like?.....	p. 131
Leviathan is also a regular marine animal.....	p. 133
What names are given to him?.....	p. 134
The <b>“face of the deep”</b> vs. <b>“the face of the ground”</b> .....	p. 138
Chapter 16 – The Great Deeps – a study of Biblical Cosmology.....	p.138
A picture of the universe.....	p. 140
A deeper Look at the Deep.....	p. 146
Chapter 17 – The Crooked Serpent.....	p. 147
Chapter 18 – Twos and Threes and Interpretation of the scriptures.....	p. 151
“taken out of the way”.....	p. 152
<b>“sides of the north”</b> .....	p. 153
Chapter 19 – Why Would it be so Hard for some to Believe?.....	p. 153
Finale.....	p. 155
Conclusion.....	p. 156

## Preface

First of all may it be said at the beginning that this work is not a representation of the creation-evolutionistic position; that God created (Gen. 1:1) and after that, things began to evolve for millions of years. There is no evolution in the Bible. Nothing, according to the Bible has “evolved.” The argument by the modern creationists to group true Bible believing interpretation of the Bible, (or the true Biblical position) with the creation-evolutionistic position is simply a sloppy, lazy attempt to prove a point, that there is no gap in Genesis 1:2 on the basis of Romans 5:12. And to deny Biblical truth on the basis and accusation that the true, Bible believing position is connected with evolution is false accusation, misrepresentation, and an attack and an approach to their own agenda and ministry while at the same time hiding their own sin of omission by hiding Biblical truth and not teaching ALL THE COUNSEL OF GOD (Acts 20:27).

The “gap” is the Biblical doctrine that at Genesis 1:2 there was a period of time between verses 1 and 3 because of God’s judgment. Although the word “gap” is not mentioned in the context it is an all-inclusive word, explaining God’s judgment that took place between Genesis 1:1, the original creation and the 6-day recreation starting from verse 3.

Just because the word “gap” is not used in the immediate context does not negate the evidence of this event and the Biblical practice of a *GAP between two different historical or prophetic events that are mentioned throughout the Bible*. Just because the word “Trinity” is not a Biblical term does not negate the Bible doctrine throughout the scripture that there is God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost. Also, God is not obligated all the time to explain any of His revelation in just one verse in the immediate context. He will try the readers’ patience to see if the student of the word of God will “**study**” and “**search the scriptures.**”

Just because the word “Rapture” is not mentioned in 1 Corinthians 15 or 1 Thessalonians 4:16-18 that would not negate the Biblical doctrine of the “catching out” (“caught up”) taught throughout the Bible. A close analysis of the scriptures will prove the fact of a flood in Genesis 1:2.

Much material is being published by anti-gap theorists such as Henry Morris ICR (Institute for Christian Research), Kent Hovind (Creation ‘Science’ Evangelism), and Ken Ham, M.H. Tabb along with other ‘creationists’ who have ignorantly stumbled over words and verses of the Bible to prove their theory. Kent Hovind goes as far to call the gap “godless,” indicting it for the furtherance of “communism, humanism, and Nazism.”

These men are trying to fight plain truths just to prove a narrowly held subjective, evolutionistic supposition that is not based on the Bible itself but on the need to deny theistic evolutionists. Their argument is rather convenient but not scriptural. It serves no purpose to twist the truth in order to prove the truth. And that is exactly what they are doing.

It is not the first time that such men have claimed some kind of teaching while at the same time betrayed the Bible in many other places, especially if their ministry (as in this

case) has something to do with “**SCIENCE.**” The apostle Paul warned Timothy of such people, “**O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of SCIENCE FALSELY SO CALLED**” (1 Tim. 6:20).

We will prove in this book the devices of Satan (2 Cor. 2:11), but “**There are many devices in a man’s heart; nevertheless the counsel of the LORD, that shall stand**” (Prov. 19:21).

Creation ‘Science’ Evangelism is just another attempt by Satan to use conservative Christians against the Biblical position. Bible believers have been preaching against communism and evolution since they (communism and evolution) stuck their ugly heads up. The non-gap theorists call themselves “creationists” and claim that we are compromising with the theory of evolution. They have that right to accuse us, but they have the right to be wrong also.

While the anti-gap theorists prove creation and refute the gap “theory” (as they call it) they themselves are guilty of creating more “MISSING LINKS.” Communism and evolution create more questions instead of answering them. Consciously or unconsciously the “creation” crowd is guilty of creating more “missing links” concerning Bible interpretation and is probably one of the most subtle attempts these last days to get Bible-believers “off base.”

We’ve dealt with this kind of stuff before. When the Pentecostals came on the scene they preached about “the initial evidence of the HOLY-Ghost.” Their attempt to get Christians to re-enact Pentecost and speak in tongues as evidence of a person’s salvation is nothing more than a “front” of “spirituality.” What is their problem? They disobeyed the command in 2 Timothy 2:15, “**rightly dividing the word of truth.**” In their attempt to be spiritual they became carnal.

The Pentecostals and Charismatics came along and have been making the attempt to get people to talk in tongues, do miracles, get the “holy laugh” etc. In their attempt to be knowledgeable concerning the “Holy Ghost” and the gifts of the Holy Spirit they turn out to be some of the most illiterate professing Christians concerning matters of the Holy Spirit. They have caused one of the biggest movements of effeminate Christianity this world has ever seen. They can’t divide the Book.

The ‘holiness’ crowd came along and tried to prove their holiness and “sanctification.” They ended up with a bunch of legalistic Pharisees that taught they can’t sin, (1 John 3:9) of course using the Bible. What was their problem? They never learned how to divide the Book (2 Tim. 2:15).

The Fundamentalist crowd “popped up” to prove that soul winning was “it.” Big schools popped up to produce “big” churches, for “big” names, and have “big” conferences, etc. Their attempt to be the model churches and bastions of orthodox turned out to be slick, smooth apostates of professing Christianity and has left many of its followers “high and dry.”

Brother Jack Schaap (Pastor of First Baptist Church of Hammond, IN as of 2010) took advantage of the ‘little holes’ that Jack Hyles (Schaap’s father-in-law) left, and has now busted his father-in-law’s heresies wide open. Hyles made professions of faith concerning the King James Bibles to be the word of God, which many times he did, but, wait a minute; he’d turn right around and still put soul winning on a pedestal. He still made reference to a Greek word and built a sermon on IT instead of from the King James

text itself. So now Schaap openly professes that the word of God is only in the original words that were spoken in those original languages destroying 2 Timothy 3:16 and the present-tense of **“all scripture IS GIVEN by inspiration and IS profitable...”** He’s taken the Neo-Evangelical position that Fundamentalists were supposedly standing against. Their doctrine of “separation” is no more fundamental than the Pharisees’ position during Jesus’ time who thought their traditions of men were more important than the words of God (Mark 7:3-13). There was never a cleansing, a breaking down, a repentance of overthrowing Biblical words such as “dispensations” for the sake of soul winning, pastoral authority, Baptist brider, and other heresies. What was their problem? They put soul winning on a pedestal and left off dividing the BOOK!!! While they boast about “the fundamentals” (the virgin birth, the literal Return of the Lord Jesus Christ, infallibility of the scriptures, [That’s a joke too!] etc.) they couldn’t tell the basic, Biblical fundamentals of true Biblical interpretation (Isa. 66:2; 2 Tim. 2:15; Isa. 28; 1 Cor. 2:13). [See our book called **“The Perils of Hyper Fundamentalism”**].

God has preserved His eternal words in the International language of the English King James Bible 1611. One of the fundamentals of the faith is BELIEVING God has kept His word, word perfect (Psa. 12:6, 7; 138:2).

In their attempt to fill in the gaps or shall we say find the “missing links” to expose communism and evolution the young earth ‘creationists’ have misused their “ministries” to the extent or extreme of producing more “gaps” and more missing links than you can imagine.

While creationists (that’s how we’ll identify them) claim the ‘scientific’ (1 Tim. 6:20) approach to prove creation against evolution (which is commendable) they’ve taken a very UNSCIENTIFIC (or more appropriately an EVOLUTIONISTIC) approach as to their method of Biblical interpretation when OUTSIDE resources are used for their ‘findings.’ *Some* use a dictionary or Hebrew or Greek lexicons to **DIS**prove a word from the King James Bible.

We are not going to refer to any Hebrew and Greek manuscripts for our final authority of interpretation. We are not going to refer to Webster’s dictionary (as Kent Hovind does) lexicons, (as students of the Greek language do) or commentaries for the plain, simple interpretation of the scriptures. We are going to go to the scriptures themselves and allow God, the Creator of the heavens and the earth to speak for Himself. He is a real Man (John 19:5). He is very capable of speaking for Himself, just let Him do it. Just give Him the time and with a little bit of patience you will see what He was trying to get through to YOU.

The word of God and the Holy Ghost are the ultimate Interpreters and Teachers of the truth (Gen. 40:8; Dan. 2:27-30; Luke 24:44-45; John 16:13; 2 Pet. 2:19-21). The human prerequisites for understanding are a humble mind, a believing heart, and a willing spirit (2 Kings 22:18-19; Psa. 119:18; John 7:14-17; Eph. 1:18; 1 Thess. 2:13). Dishonest scholars change the words of the Bible to match their preconceived opinions and preferences (Jer. 42:1-20; Ezek. 14:1-9; Rom. 1:25; 2 Cor. 2:17). That is the typical, ignorant approach of evolutionists, Greek and Hebrew teachers and students, apostate Fundamentalists, and Laodician Christians that are critical to any words in the Authorized Version of the King James Bibles.

Many times the fault with man in seeking the interpretation of the word of God is the desire to receive only the positive and not the negative. The word of God is a two-edged

sword with both negative and positive truths (Hab. 2:1; Heb. 4:12; Jam. 4:12). Negative truths usually precede positive truths (Jer. 1:9, 10; Hag. 1:13; 2 Tim. 3:16, 17; 4:2-4).

We are going to search and study a great number of scriptures (John 5:39) using a concordance and take each portion of scripture and make the *comparisons* where necessary INCLUDING THE VERY FIRST CHAPTER OF THE BIBLE according to 1 Corinthians 2:13, along with the *repetitions* according to Isaiah 28:10, 13 **“For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little”** and *divisions* also according to 2 Timothy 2:15. We are going to let God speak for Himself.

For some odd reason our ‘creationist’ brethren would have you think that the words, **“search the scriptures”** (John 5:39) would *exclude* the very first two chapters of the Bible, ESPECIALLY THE FIRST THREE VERSES OF THE BIBLE, AND ISOLATE THEM FROM ANY AND ALL CROSS-REFERENCES OF ADDITIONAL REVELATION THAT WOULD SHED LIGHT AND EXPOUND ITSELF. We’re not going to take their “advice” of omission. [Hello Eve! (Gen. 3:2)] We’re going to “search” the whole Book from cover to cover, all 66 books in its entirety. It is a complete body of truth of **“the holy scriptures”** (Rom. 1:2; 2 Tim. 3:15) that **“cannot be broken”** (John 10:35). And any attempt to alienate and break words or phrases that the Holy Spirit Himself repeat with additional revelation is simply thievery. **“Thou shalt not steal!”**

## Chapter 1 False Accusations by the Non-Gap Theorists

False accusation is one of the last day predictions (2 Tim. 3:3) even within the body of Christ. False accusation is a typical method of Satan in the mouth of apostate Fundamentalists who are yet to learned how to **“rightly [divide] the word of truth”** and cannot be approved of God (2 Tim. 2:15) concerning such matters as salvation in different periods of time (Old Testament, New Testament, Tribulation and Millennium). If a man cannot see and understand the revelation of New Testament, church age salvation how it is DIFFERENT from salvation in the Tribulation or in the Millennium, then his mind and heart and spirit are not exercised in this matter of DIVISIONS. And that is also the case with our matter at hand. Many ignore the divisions in the very first chapter of the Bible and simple scientific numerology (among other things) by taking for granted that there is no gap, or catastrophe, nothing negative that occurred in Genesis 1:2.

M.H Tabb’s commentary on Hebrews and the booklet “The Gap Theory” manifest the ignorance and inability of making the Biblical divisions where the Bible itself makes them. We will quote Mr. Tabb from his booklet on the gap issue.

The non-gappers for the most part “bunch” all those that believe in a gap whether it be theistic evolutionists or Bible believers into one big group thinking that they are trying to accommodate and reconcile evolution with the Bible, a doctrine called “scientific evolution.” As we have already mentioned in the Preface these men are trying to fight plain truths just to prove a narrowly held subjective, *evolutionistic* supposition that is not based on the Bible itself but on the need to deny theistic evolutionists. Their argument is rather convenient but not scriptural, although Satan is good at picking out scriptures to

tell a lie. *It serves no purpose to twist the truth or falsely accuse and misrepresent others in order to try to prove the truth.* And that is exactly what M.H.Tabb (Pastor in Fort Walton Beach, Fl.) does in his booklet.

We have listed some of the false accusations and misrepresentations of Bro. Tabb.

“All gap theorists accommodate millions of years for the age of the earth. They all accommodate evolution.” (The Gap Theory, p. 6)

No, not the Bible believers that this author knows. We don't accommodate evolution. We are not theistic evolutionists. *Tabb does not have the ability to discern the difference between theistic evolutionists and sound BIBLE DOCTRINE.* Just the opposite is true. The Bible simply makes divisions according to its own instructions, (2 Timothy 2:15) where the non-gap theorists DO NOT. The Bible doesn't say that you are to compare scripture with scripture EXCEPT THE FIRST CHAPTER OF THE BIBLE. No, we're to compare scripture with scripture INCLUDING GENESIS 1:1-1:3. This author is a Bible believer and the Bible does not support anything even close to evolution. Moses, David, Isaiah, the Lord Jesus Christ, Paul, etc., all believed and were inspired by the Holy Spirit to write of creation and not of evolution. They all believed in divisions and GAPS as we will show throughout this work. To “bunch” all Bible-believers who are against evolution in the same group with those that teach that the gap is to “harmonize the Bible with accepted scientific teachings” and to “accommodate millions of years for the age of the earth” is FALSE ACCUSATION (2 Tim. 3:3). That is the work of SATAN, for he is the “**accuser of our brethren**” (Rev. 12:10).

For example, here is a quote by a man who does NOT believe in the gap -

“The true gap theorist ignores evidence consistent with an age for the earth of less than 10,000 years.”

#### **False Accusation No.1 by Tabb**

“Thus, the purpose of the gap theory was to harmonize the Bible with accepted scientific teachings.”

False! This author does not know of one true Bible believer who believes in the gap that *this present* earth is more than 7-8000 years old, let alone 10,000.

#### **False Accusation No. 2 by Tabb**

In defense of their position, the non-gap theorists say this,  
“There is no mention of billions-of-years or any great period of time. However, many people still wonder whether or not the modern scientific belief that the earth and the universe have existed for billions of years can be harmonized with a literal interpretation of the Bible.”

“All the gap theorists accommodate millions of years for the age of the earth.”  
Dr. M.H.Tabb (The Gap Theory, p. 6)



Creationists “bunch” all those who believe in a gap into one big group without making any distinction between creation evolutions who claim THIS present earth to be billions of years old and true Bible believers who believe like the creationists that *this present earth* is only about 6-9, or 10 thousand years old.

### **False Accusation No. 3 by Tabb**

“The gap theory does away with the evidence for Noah’s flood. If the fossil record was formed by “Lucifer’s flood,” then what did the global flood of Noah do? On this point the gap theorist is forced to conclude that Noah’s flood left virtually no trace to be consistent, the gap theorist would have to defend Noah’s flood as a local event.”

You missed! No true Bible believer that this author knows has ever preached and taught that Noah’s flood was a local flood. It was a flood upon the whole earth, plain and simple.

### **False Accusation No. 4 by Tabb**

Many of those who do not believe in a gap say that all gap theorists teach that there were people on this earth before Adam.

Of course that is a lie. This author does not personally know of one true Bible believer that teaches there were *people* on *this* earth before Adam. There was no Adamic race until Adam showed up and that wasn’t until Genesis 1:28. We will show that although there weren’t any *people* on the earth, there were the “**sons of God**” who are *like* people and die *like* men (Psa. 82:7). They were before Adam and Eve. And just like God wiped out the human race during Noah’s time with a flood *and started over* with Noah and his sons. So the type are the “**sons of God**” who were judged with a flood and started over again with “**the son of God**” (Luke 3:38) Adam. You get that clear revelation only in the King James Bible (1611) by patiently comparing scripture with scripture.

### **False Accusation No. 5 by Tabb**

All those that believe in the gap have to refer to the Hebrew or Greek to prove their point. Their claim is that since Chalmers (1780-1847), a Scottish theologian referred to the Hebrew to show that “**was**” (Gen. 1:2) in the King James Version is a mistranslation of a Hebrew word and that it should have been translated “became” to prove a gap in Genesis 1:2. Their claim also is that Chalmers did that to accommodate the contemporary theories of evolution of Darwin at that time. That may be so. And so since Chalmers did that, that means that everybody that believes in a gap in Genesis 1:2 is working on false grounds; that they got their doctrine from previous writers since Chalmers, via Larkin, Scofield, Pink, etc.

False accusation! We are going to prove an historical account of a *restoration* of the “**world that then was**” (2 Peter 3:6) without referring to ANY Hebrew or Greek text, or any reference to Larkin, Scofield, Pink and any other.

Not only that, there are a number of those opposed to the gap of Genesis 1:2 who use the Hebrew language or the Greek language or a DICTIONARY to prove their point

rather than using strictly the King James Bible. The King James Bible is a dictionary in itself and defines its own terms.

While the modern-day ‘creationist’ movement falsely accuses ‘gap’ believers, we will prove that it is not the true Bible believers (who believe in a gap) that are trying to “harmonize the Bible with accepted scientific teachings.” On the contrary, it is the non-gappers who have created more “missing links” (terminology of humanistic evolutionists) to cause a “darkness” or blindness in the body of Christ these last days that is simply appalling.

For example, the modern Fundamentalist cannot handle the fact that there are waters (plural) ABOVE the heavens (plural). For God placed “a firmament” (Gen. 1:6) which is “the firmament” (v. 7) in the second heaven which “divided the waters (first heaven) which were under the firmament from the waters (second heaven) which were above the firmament” (called “Heaven” v. 8). David wrote about that (Psalms 148:4). Job wrote about that (Job 26:7, 13; 38:30) and scores of other authors under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost proved beyond a shadow of a doubt that these waters above the firmament are not in this earth’s atmosphere by a long shot. But men like Kent Hovind, M.H.Tabb and company cannot get past their own atmosphere – doctrinally concerning this matter. The defection by most of the body of Christ while professing “science” have fallen to what Paul talked about “science falsely so called” (1 Timothy 6:20).

So let’s “clear the air” as to what position the Bible takes. It is not Chalmers’ crowd that teaches that THIS present earth is millions or billions of years old. Secondly the Bible position is not that God started with a glob of darkness, void earth, that was created without form, for then God would be CONTRADICTING Himself, because when comparing scripture with scripture as told in 1 Corinthians 2:13, the conclusion is obvious as will be shown.

**“For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, HE CREATED IT NOT IN VAIN, (the earth became without form and void (Gen. 1:2), “...he formed it to be inhabited...”** The earth was inhabited, NOT with men, but with the **“sons of God”** (Job 38:4-7). We will go into great detail about this later.

#### **False Accusation No. 6 by Tabb**

“The gap theorists believe that the sun was here before the earth.” (Tabb, The Gap Theory” p. 74)

Correction: First of all the Gap is not a theory. It is a Bible doctrine. Secondly Tabb’s false accusation clumps all of those who believe in a gap into one big group. The sun was NOT created before the earth. *The sun was created on the fourth day* which is in type of the Lord Jesus Christ, **“the Sun of righteousness”** who appeared on the fourth one-thousand year period. Unfortunately, men like Tabb, throughout their writings will often misrepresent others and lie. He tried to group us with Scofield, who was right about the gap of Genesis 1:2 but is to be ignored concerning Genesis 1:16.

## Summary

A summary of differences as to where the creationists stand and this author (along with other Bible believers) is shown below. Throughout this work the reader will see the differences as the scriptures will explain themselves –

“Creationist”	Bible believer
1. They believe in a literal 6, 24-hour days of creation.	We believe in a literal 6, 24-hour days of creation.
2. They believe in a young earth.	We believe that <i>this</i> earth (Heb. 11:3) is “young.”
3. They don’t believe in evolution.	We don’t believe in evolution.
4. They believe in studying the scriptures.	We believe in “ <b>rightly dividing the word of truth</b> ” starting from Genesis 1:1, including Genesis 1:2 all the way to Rev. 22:21.
5. They believe in comparing scriptures (1 Cor. 2:13) <b>except</b> in Genesis 1:2	We believe in comparing <i>any</i> and <i>all</i> scriptures with other scriptures especially in the first two chapters of the Bible.
6. They believe their was only one world that God created. It is only <i>about</i> 6,000 years old.	We believe God created <i>worlds</i> (plural) according to Hebrews 1:3; 11:3 including <i>this</i> world, (earth) which is <i>only about 6,000 years old</i> .
7. They don’t divide the Book where the scriptures themselves make divisions.	We recognize divisions where the Holy Bible makes those divisions.
8. They profess to live by “every word...”	We not only profess to live by “ <b>every word</b> ” we take it literally when it comes to expounding “ <b>every word</b> ,” such as “ <b>heaven</b> ,” “ <b>heavens</b> ,” “ <b>without form</b> ,” “ <b>void</b> ,” “ <b>waterS</b> ,” “ <b>face of the deep</b> ,” “ <b>generation</b> ,” “ <b>generations</b> ,” etc.

In short, you can be a “creationist” and not a true, Bible believer. But a true Bible believer is always a creationist.

## Chapter 2 Stumbling Block and Bone of Contention – Romans 5:12

Before we expound the scriptures concerning the gap fact we must show why many Fundamentalists say that there is no gap in Genesis 1:2, thus denying anything of a re-creation to start the 6-day re-creation of *this* earth. Their theory is based upon Romans 5:12. Of course they'll run over to Revelation 21:1 and rush into what it says there while already having denied what the Book says in SO MANY OTHER PLACES, they cannot reconcile Romans 5:12 and Revelation 21:1 in light of the rest of the Bible. We will discuss Revelation 21:1 in chapter 14.

One of the greatest stumbling blocks among the modern young earth 'creationist' movement is Romans 5:12 which reads, **“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.”**

This verse is the basis to prove that sin and death could not have already existed until Adam sinned and fell in Genesis 3. In other words there was no sin, death, nor evil, etc., as a result of God's judgment before Adam fell.

Tabb says this about death –

“Death came by man. Death is the result of sin. Sin entered this planet by man (one man) and he is identified as Adam. So there was no death before Adam. That alone does away with the gap theory, but there is plenty more.”

(The Gap Theory, p. 9)

We agree to the fact that Adam's sin is the cause of sin entering *INTO THIS WORLD*. But what Tabb overlooks is that Eve sinned *before* Adam and the Devil fell *before* Eve. So you've got to realize that sin and death WERE BEFORE ADAM.

We will discuss all of this in more detail in this book.

Another problem among the brethren is their views vary for example when it comes to trying to pinpoint when Satan fell. Some say he fell on the second or third day. Believe it or not there are still others who go so far to the extreme and say that he couldn't have fallen until Adam fell. There are differences of opinion when he fell. They will say that God created the universe in 6 days starting from Genesis 1:1 and it runs through verse 2 without any “break” or “gap” to the end of the chapter, despite the fact that verses 2, 4-8 have so many negative blasts in them that you couldn't possibly smooth them over unless your approach to the Book was subjective and positive, just like Satan's **“Yea (that's positive) hath God said...”** Verse 2 alone is a 4-fold negative blast, **“the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep.”** Let's break the verse down;

1. **“the earth was without form – NEGATIVE!**
2. **“and void...” – NEGATIVE!**
3. **“and darkness...” - NAGATIVE!**
4. **“was upon the face of the deep – NAGATIVE! (as we shall see).**

How do you reconcile the fact that God said, **“For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, HE CREATED IT NOT IN VAIN, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and *there is none else*”** (Isaiah 45:18) when in Genesis 1:2 you’ve got –

**“the earth was without form – NEGATIVE!**

**“and void...” – NEGATIVE!**

**“and darkness...” – NAGATIVE!**

**“was upon the face of the deep – NAGATIVE!**

There is no possible way to reconcile **“he created it not in vain”** with **“without form” “void” “darkness”** etc. other than to say that God’s creation was a PROCESS. THAT IS EVOLUTION, the very thing they accuse evolution creationists of. They fell into their own trap.

There is yet another “missing link” as to who Leviathan is. They can’t figure out whether Leviathan was a crocodile, an elephant, whale, or a hippopotamus, to deny that FACT that Satan himself is a seven-headed sea monster. More on that later.

The anti-gap theorists use Romans 5:12 as their foundation upon which they build their theory. Anybody can prove from the Bible his or her own convictions and then make those convictions a Bible doctrine. Karl Marx used the Bible to prove communism by using Acts 2:44 and 4:32. Hitler had “theological” reasons to kill about 7 million Jews. Stalin killed close to 20 million, a great many of them were murdered in the Gulags during former Soviet Russia. Of course he had “good reason” for doing that. The bloody whore of the Catholic Church (Rev. 17-18) has her “theological” reasons to reign over the kings of the earth. So that is nothing new. Any and all heresies always have an element of truth in them and come across very positive to fool the unconcerned and naïve Christian. Heresy is always truth that has been twisted just a little bit.

### A Non-Gap Theorist Explanation of Creation

Below would basically represent the non-gap position of the creation of the heaven and the earth.

“The simple, straightforward meaning of Genesis 1:1-2 is that when God at the beginning created the earth it was initially formless, empty, and dark, and God’s Spirit was there above the waters. It was through His creative energy that the world was then *progressively* “formed and filled” during the remaining six days of creation. Consider the analogy of a potter making a vase. The first thing he does is get a ball of clay. What he has is good, but it is unformed. Next, he shapes it into a vase, using his potter’s wheel. Now it is no longer formless. He then might dry it, apply glaze, and fire it. Now it is ready to be filled—with flowers and water. At no time could one of the stages be considered evil or bad. It was just not finished—unformed and unfilled. When it was finally formed and filled, it could be described as “very good.”

(From ChristianAnswers.Net)

That sounds so nice, sweet and positive – “**Yea...**” (Gen. 3:1). That is what you call man’s explanation of a text and not a comparing of verses so that God can explain what He meant. That story sounds like a religion for adults to play with but it has nothing to do with *comparing* (1 Cor. 2:13), *dividing* (2 Tim. 2:15), and *repetition* (Isa. 28:10, 13) “**here a little and there a little**” comparing scripture with scripture. Moses wrote that the earth “**was without form, [NEGATIVE] and void; [NEGATIVE] and darkness [NEGATIVE] was upon the face of the deep.**” [They don’t even want you to know what the Bible says elsewhere concerning “**the face of the deep.**”] You’ve got four different phrases here that can be explained elsewhere in the scriptures so that the scriptures can interpret the scriptures *without man’s private interpretation*. There is no need for man’s explanation (Laodicea) of what God says when God Himself tells you what He said when you apply 1 Corinthians 2:13 by comparing scripture with scripture.

Isaiah 45:18 reads such, “**For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.**”

This tells us that the Lord God did NOT originally create the earth in such a desolate condition. The word “**vain**” in Isaiah 45:18 and the term “**without form**” in Genesis 1:2 are from the same Hebrew word *tohuw*, (although we’re going to look at the words “without form” and “void” in the “original” English of the Authorized Version). These verses by themselves, when rightly-divided in either language, destroy the core premise of the ‘young earth creationism’ “ministry” of Ham, Hovind, Tabb, and others. Genesis 1:2 compared with Isaiah 45:18 rules out God initially making the Earth as a formless mud ball, then turning on the work lights and starting the decorating process.

Let’s quickly critique this non-gap explanation of the creation –

1. There was no mention about the “**deep**” (Gen. 1:2). OMISSION!
2. There was no distinction made concerning the “**waters**” although there are FOUR distinct types of bodies of waters from Genesis 1:2-10 in four different locations. OMISSION!
3. There was no distinction made concerning the “**world**” when the Book says that God created the “**worlds**” (plural) (Heb. 1:2; 11:3). OMISSION!
4. Note the expression “**during the *remaining* six days of creation**” as if he unconsciously admitted to the fact that there was an element of time BEFORE “**the remaining six days of creation.**”
5. Then follows the expression “**The first thing he does is get a ball of clay. What he has is good, but it is unformed.**” Notice “**What he has is good**” meaning what God had to work with, the material “**as a ball of clay**” [?] although God did not say concerning the 6-day, re-creation “**and God saw that it was good**” as He did before that. We’ll discuss this in detail later.
6. “**At no time could one of the stages be considered evil or bad.**”  
It’s obvious he didn’t do any searching of the scriptures or else he wouldn’t have said that.
7. “**When it was finally formed and filled, it could be described as “very good.”**”

Yes, without distinction but not without exception (cf. Gen. 1:6-9). He missed **“And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good”** (Gen. 1:31). What God did in the 6-day re-creation was very good but that which was “hung over” from **“the heavens were of old,”** (2 Pet. 3:5) made its way into **“the heavens and the earth, which are now”** (2 Pet. 3:7) into Adam’s world. Adam, the federal head of his world fell through Eve who had already fallen and died spiritually, and as already did the sons of God who died spiritually.

### Biblical Revelation of the words **“Every thing”** and Noah’s Flood

If that weren’t enough if we were to run references with the concordance and find the next time, after Genesis chapter one, where the holy scriptures has written **“every thing”** you would simply find that it is repeated during the flood of Noah’s day, **“And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the earth shall die”** (Gen. 6:17).

Look at the words **“every thing.”** Do you notice something really strange about it? **Question:** Did **“every thing”** that was on the earth **“die”** during the flood? Yes! But what about the aquatic animals that are “under the earth.” Did they die? Did God destroy all the aquatic animals? Of course NOT!

Let’s explain what the young earth creationist crowd and company OMITTED. [Hello Eve!] The Bible shows that every time within account of the flood, not one time does **“every thing”** have to do with *what was in the waters*. The words **“every thing”** from Genesis 6:17 to Genesis 8:21 are mentioned 10 times. There is no mention of animals **“under the earth”** or the **“fish of the seas.”** Observe –

6:17 “to destroy all flesh, wherein *is* the breath of life, from under heaven; *and every thing* that *is* in the earth shall die....”

6:19 “And of **every** living **thing** of all flesh, two of **every** *sort* shalt thou bring ...”

There is no mention of animals **“under the earth”** or the **“fish of the seas”** The same is true for all the rest of the verses of Noah’s flood.

6:20 “Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of **every** creeping **thing** of the earth after his kind, two of **every** *sort* ...”

7:8 “...and of fowls, and of **every thing** that creepeth upon the earth...”

7:14 “They, and **every** beast after his kind, and all the cattle after their kind, and **every** creeping **thing** that creepeth upon the earth after his kind, and **every** fowl after his kind, **every** bird of **every** sort.”

7:21 “And all flesh died that moved upon the earth, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of beast, and of **every** creeping **thing** that creepeth upon the earth, and **every** man:”

8:1 “And God remembered Noah, and **every** living **thing**, and all the cattle that *was* with him in the ark:”

8:17 “Bring forth with thee **every** living **thing** that *is* with thee, of all flesh, *both* of fowl, and of cattle, and of **every** creeping **thing** that creepeth upon the earth;”

8:19 Genesis 8:19 **Every** beast, **every** creeping **thing**, and **every** fowl, *and* whatsoever creepeth upon the earth,

8:21 “I will not again curse the ground any more for man's sake;...neither will I again smite any more **every thing** living, as I have done.”

9:3 “**Every** moving **thing** that liveth shall be meat for you;”

Notice again, that there is not one mention by the Holy Spirit about the “fish of the sea” which is a Biblical expression – (Gen. 1:26, 28)

and have dominion over the **fish** of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

#### The Gap FACT and the “**fish**” and the “**sea**”

Unfortunately our ‘creationist’ friends forgot to tell you that there is a *GAP* between Genesis 1:26, 28 and Genesis 9:2. Both references have to do with God’s covenant to Adam and Noah and their dominion over the animal kingdom. There is absolutely NOTHING mentioned between their respective covenants concerning the fish of the sea in Genesis 6:17 to 9:3. That is a GAP FACT!

Notice the DISTINCTION between the “**fish of the sea**” (Gen.1:26, 28 and 9:2) and “**the fowl of the air**” or “**over all the earth**” or “**upon the earth.**”

Genesis 1:26 “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the **fish of the sea**, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.”

Genesis 1:28 “And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the **fish of the sea**, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”

Genesis 9:2 And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth *upon* the earth, and upon all the fishes of the **sea**; into your hand are they delivered.



Genesis 1:26, 28

(GAP)

Genesis 9:2

Both covenants are  
*divided* by Noah's  
flood

Of course, the word “**replenish**” is mentioned in the context of both covenants given to Adam and Noah. But that will be for a later discussion.

So therefore, the Ark did not need to carry every kind of animal—nor did God command it. The word “every” means ‘all without distinction,’ not ‘all without exception.’ The ark carried only air-breathing, land-dwelling animals, creeping things, and winged animals such as birds. Aquatic life (fish, whales, etc.) and many amphibious creatures could have survived in sufficient numbers outside the Ark. Those aquatic animals are represented by Satan the fifth cherub (Ezek. 28). That explains why after Satan could survive a universal flood, just like aquatic animals survived Noah's flood. Satan is Leviathan, an aquatic monster. We will discuss that in more detail in chapter 15 concerning Leviathan.

Not only that. Let's repeat what this “creationist” said in his profession of “faith” concerning creation.

“It was through His creative energy that the world was then *progressively* formed and filled’ during the remaining six days of creation.”

Now look at what he said, “the world was then progressively...” Sounds like evolution to me. In other words the creation was a process.

Then he says, “during the REMAINING six days” as if to say that there were other days before that.

He stumbled right into a contradiction. Without realizing it, he leaned toward the FACT that there was something BEFORE Genesis 1:3, but he FAILED to DIVIDE the Book.

As mentioned earlier, it is not the believers of the Gap fact that are “trying to reconcile evolution with creation. On the contrary, it is the “creationists” that are causing more confusion.

### Chapter 3 Root of the Problem

When we dig a bit deeper into this issue we come down to one simple, root problem. The reason why there are differences of opinion concerning the “gap” issue is because the problem lies in the fact that many of our brethren simply chose not to rightly divide the word of truth according to 2 Timothy 2:15 where the Holy Spirit makes that division. Since they fumbled the ball concerning God's method and command to study the word of God along with rightly dividing it, they missed the very second verse in the entire Bible which deals with DIVISION which the Holy Spirit Himself commented upon it in verse 4. From that point on any verses that are even remotely connected with this issue become

a stumbling block to our brethren. God simply closed their eyes. **“the god of THIS world [in distinction from “the world that then was,”] hath blinded the minds of them which believe not”** (2 Cor. 4:4).

Where the Bible itself makes a distinct division the non-gap opponents smoothed over it. They tried to cram two different worlds mentioned in 2 Peter 3:5-7 into one world and missed the blessing of the context of another universal disaster with the destruction of the heavens and the earth which are now –

**“But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.”**

**“...the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.**

**“...wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?**

**“Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. (2 Pet. 3:7, 10, 12, 13).**

So the crux of the matter between the non-gap theorists and the Bible believers that believe in the gap is where one group left off of 2 Timothy 2:15 for the sake of Romans 5:12, the others applied 2 Timothy 2:15 to Genesis 1:2 and related verses despite what Romans 5:12 says. If the modern Fundamentalist accepts the King James Bible as the word of God as the absolute and final authority, he **“hold the truth in unrighteousness”** by rejecting 2 Timothy 2:15 in practice; thus creating his own system of doctrine; while teaching creation (which is commendable) he accommodates evolution (although he can't see that) BY CREATING MORE MISSING LINKS.

**“Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth”** (2 Tim. 3:7)  
**“which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction”** (2 Pet. 3:16).

The argument by the anti-gap theorists is that since God created the heaven and the earth, (Gen. 1:1) there is no possible way for there to be a 4-fold negative aspect already in verse 2, and then a six-day RE-CREATION starting in verse 3. They say that if you make verse 2 a gap, then you are teaching a theory along side the theory of evolution.

The common fault with man in seeking the interpretation of the word of God is the desire to receive only the positive and not the negative. The word of God is a two-edged sword with both negative and positive truths. For example we find in Habakkuk 2:2 the following words, **“I will stand upon my watch, and set me upon the tower, and will watch to see what he will say unto me, and what I shall answer when I am reproved.”** Truth is usually preceded by a negative reproof. That is supported by the following verse, **“Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you”** (Proverbs 1:23). Notice the negative **“turn you at my reproof”** and then the positive result **“...I will pour out my spirit unto you...”**

Again to support this basic principle of truth being preceded by a negative reproof, look at 2 Timothy 3:16, **“All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for REPROOF, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:”**

Notice that all scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine first, to show what God said and is so, then follows the RERPOOF.

Here is a bit more revelation to show what God thinks of darkness, **“And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of DARKNESS, but rather REPROVE them”** (Ephesians 5:11). That is what is implied already with the negative aspect of Genesis 1:2. God had to rebuke that darkness by dividing it from the light (Gen. 1:4).

To add yet a bit more to the truth that truth is preceded by a negative truth take for instance Hebrews 4:12 **“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.”**

The word of God, the two-edged sword has a twofold purpose; to save the honest and humble believer and to destroy the proud in spirit. That is supported by what James mentions, **“There is one lawgiver, who is able to save and to DESTROY: who art thou that judgest another?”** (James 4:12).

There are yet other verses throughout the entire Bible that support the principle of negative truth preceding positive truth. For further searching of the scriptures we will leave this point for now and come back to it later when we study more precisely Genesis 1:2, but for now see also Jeremiah 1:9, 10 and Haggai 1:13.

What many of the brethren don't understand is that since God is going to destroy the heavens and the earth **“which are now,”** He could have done the very same thing in Genesis 1:2. THAT He did! Since the Book speaks of the destruction of “heavens and earth which now are, one can look at the beginning and find that it had already happened once.

History (Gen. 1:2) is studied by prophecy (2 Pet. 3:10-13) and the future is learned by studying the past! As we will see throughout the scriptures you learn the past by studying future events, and you learn the future by studying past events. What men never learn from history is they never learn from history. The Book is eternal. Future events are already spoken of in history and history is meant to be repeated. In short, Noah's flood and the destruction of the earth is history (past), but, dear friend, it is prophecy of what the Lord will do in the future **“And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man”** (Luke 17:26). And bless God, since the Book teaches of a future destruction of the **“HEAVENS”** (plural) [which did not happen during Noah's flood], then you can bet your bottom dollar that that is history repeating itself. And that would very easily justify what Solomon wrote under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit (Eccl. 1:9; 3:15).

If our greatest prophecy Book, the Bible tells us of a destruction of this earth at the Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ (at the end of the Great Tribulation) and the greatest history Book tells us of the type - the flood of Noah, (Eccl. 1:9), then WHAT IN THE WORLD WOULD BE THE TYPE OF THE DESTRUCTIONS OF THE HEAVENS (PLURAL) AND THE EARTH of 2 Peter 3? Well any ole' fool who hasn't been “educated” by some Fundamentalist would have to agree with Solomon's “law” (Eccl. 3:15) that the type of the destruction of the heavens and the earth was God's previous judgment of the heavens and the earth of Genesis 1:2 just as 2 Peter 3:4-13 talks about.

**“But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men” (2 Peter 3:7).**

**“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the HEAVENS (plural) [that didn’t happen during Noah’s flood] shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up” (2 Pet. 3:10).**

**“Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the HEAVENS (plural) [No “heavens” (plural) are mentioned concerning Noah’s flood] being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?**

**Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new HEAVENS (plural) [you’ll not read anywhere about the heavens being judged by God during Noah’s flood] and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness” (2 Pet. 3:12, 13).**

Now we could stop right there with that DIFFERENCE between the floods and call it quits and “go home” and relax but for many of our brethren Romans 5:12 is the big “hook” that has “hooked” them. And since fallen they haven’t gotten back up on their feet. Romans 5:12 to many Fundamentalists is THE stumbling block just as what Acts 2:38 is to every Catholic, Orthodox, Church of Christ, Reformed, Presbyterian, and any other that believes water baptism is necessary for a man to go to heaven. What every Campbellite or Roman Catholic will do is overthrow the entire Bible based on one verse (Acts 2:38). They think salvation for the church age believer is by works, was always by works (Old Testament) and will always be by works (from the cross to Revelation 22:21). They ignore any and all verses that show that people received the Holy Ghost by grace through faith without any kind of works (Acts 8:37; 10:44; 13:38, 39; 15:9, 11; 16:31; Rom. 4:4, 5; 5:1; 6:23; 10:9, 10, 13; 11:6; Gal. 2:16, 22; Eph. 2:8, 9; Etc.).

Many of our Fundamentalist brethren on the other hand take the other extreme. They will ignore the different ways of salvation throughout the entire Bible (Ezek. 3:20; 18:5, 9, 19, 22, 24, 26; Matt. 5-7; Acts 2:38; Heb. 6:4-6; Rev.12:17; 14:12; 22:14). The reason for that is the NEGATIVE command of **“rightly dividing the word of truth.”** THAT is where their problem begins. Many believe (M.H Tabb included) that sinners were saved the same way in the entire Old Testament as they are in the entire New Testament, without paying any attention to the distinction of dispensations. The word “dispensation” to many Fundamentalists is as the word “Gentiles” was a “cuss” word to Jews during Bible times. The problem between both groups (Catholics and Fundamentalists) is one mutual sin; **THEY IGNORE THE NEGATIVE COMMAND TO RIGHTLY DIVIDE THE WORD OF TRUTH.** A great many (not all) of the anti-gap theorists are ANTI-Dispensationalists, because dispensations speak of divisions and proper divisions are necessary to make for matters of proper interpretation of the Bible to be approved unto God (2 Tim. 2:15). If salvation is the same in the Old Testament as in the New Testament then what is the purpose of TWO (number of division) Testaments?

It is the age old problem with the modern ‘creationist’ anti-gap theorists as it was with Eve; she was deceived by making light of God’s judgment. God said, **“...for in the**

**day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt SURELY die”** She misquoted Him by saying, **“lest ye die.”** She made light of God’s severity. Satan started this “movement,” Eve “nai-Eve-ly,” followed suit, and Adam “gave in” to it. That is the problem with the Jehovah Witnesses as it is with the modern ‘creationists;’ they do not see the negative aspect of a JUDGMENT already spoken of in Genesis 1:2 and explained in light of a future JUDGMENT in Jeremiah 4:23 which is the KEY (Luke 11:52) of revelation that explains a past JUDGMENT.

### Destructive Implications

Based upon the thinking of many of the brethren that there was no death until Adam sinned, the implications of this are astounding. That justifies Eve’s and also the devil’s sins. That opens the floodgates for a woman to sin and not be guilty of it. It covers Satan’s tracts also as we shall see. That is exactly what they do with Job 41 which is speaking of a supernatural monster – Satan and not simply some little animal on this puny, little speck of dirt called “Earth.” That is what many of our non-gap theorists believe. It opens the floodgates to justify sin where in fact there is guilt. That is exactly what is happening in this world today where sin is being justified especially where a woman is involved.

For example, in court cases a woman can wrongfully accuse a husband and she gets custody of the children or where women rise up whether in the family or in government and can get away with “murder” (Jezebel, Delilah, etc.). Because Adam hearkened to the voice of his wife (Gen. 3:17) that has opened the flood gates for Eve’s “equal right’s” movement. “We want our rights” started with Eve. Adam’s sin was that he “gave in” to her or shall we say “died for her” and as a result men have been falling for women and or “giving in” to the pressures of women’s’ effeminate movement. Men have gone effeminate, belonging to denominations that were started by women; Adventists, Charismatics, Mormons, “Christian Science, and sitting under the preaching of women preachers. What a mess!

Because of the fact that they have covered Eve’s sin, guilt and judgment they have covered up somebody else’s sins – Satan’s. That’s right, because they can not rightly understand Romans 5:12, it has taken them to the extreme of denying the fact that there is a real supernatural monster, Leviathan whose domain is in the second heaven that is spoken of in Job 41. But before we get into that subject let’s start out simple and with the help of the Lord, keep it simple and see where the problem begins.

We will deal with Adam’s sin a bit later showing that he is the federal “head” of the human race and responsible for sin “[**passing**] **upon all men...**” (Rom. 5:12). But In light of the heresy that many of the Fundamentalists teach that Adam was the first to sin, and or, death starts with him, then the logic of such heresy ends up producing a “prostitute” doctrine, or religion. It is in the Book of Proverbs chapter 30 verse 20, Solomon writes, **“Such is the way of an adulterous woman; she eateth, and wipeth her mouth, and saith, I have done no wickedness.”** This verse is dealing with a woman who is an adulteress. While she is living as an adulteress she has no conscience about her “occupation.” She has a good meal, (of course she prayed over the meal) and says, **“I have done no wickedness.”** That is exactly what a great many Fundamentalists are

saying in so many words that there was no sin, death or judgment on the part of Eve, [**She has] done no wickedness.**” You see her “ministry” became more important than the holy words of God in the King James Bible. Her “name” and “reputation” to maintain her “clients” was her real “bread” but the Holy Bible had to take a “back seat” (Cf. Psa. 138:2). This can also be applied to the adulteress WHORE of Revelation 17:1-6 of the Roman Catholic Church, that wipes its mouth after having killed millions of people and thousands of true Christians, (and eats them by the way Rev 20), wipes its mouth and says, “I have done no wickedness.” All roads lead to Rome. All heresies end up at Rome, the MOTHER OF HARLOTS. And many modern Fundamentalists have taken one more step closer to Mother Whore teaching that there was no sin (1 John 3:4), no transgression (1 Tim. 2:14), no guilt, no death (Rom. 6:23), no deception (1 Tim. 2:14) and no beguiling (Gen. 3:13) and no judgment from God upon Eve or upon the one who deceived her before Adam’s sin.

The history of the anti-gap theorists consists of a long struggle to get you to deny progressive revelation as we will see as we go back before Eve’s sin and study what the scriptures themselves say about Genesis 1:2.

God is a God of revelation. There is no possible way to understand what happened in Genesis 1:2 without understanding with what **“And the earth was without form”** is connected with; with what **“and void”** is connected with; with what **“and darkness was”** is connected with; and with what **“upon the face of the deep”** is connected, and many other words in the first two chapters of the Bible. These “missing links” are revealed to them that seek God’s face rather than a ministry. Pray about that one for awhile. We will slowly but surely work up to that point concerning Genesis 1:2.

We are just kind of touching the surface of these linking subjects and getting our toes wet to give you some kind of framework at the start. We will delve into each subject and go in “deep” while keeping our oxygen tanks full without having to grasp for air.

## Chapter 4 Eve’s Sin

### Eve had the Knowledge and Revelation of God

First let us deal with the matter of the sin of Eve before Adam. This must be established to show Romans 5:12 in its true light. We’re going to deal here with whether there was sin and death *before* Adam fell because men like Tabb say “Sin entered this planet by man (one man) and he is identified as Adam. So there was no death before Adam.”

It is clear that Eve obviously had the revelation given her not to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil before she was tempted. She quoted [misquoted] what God said, **“But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die”** (Gen. 3:3). She had the light and revelation of God concerning what NOT to do. She knew the “law” if you will. It was in her heart. It was NEGATIVE, **“NOT to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.”** She knew of God’s words when she was tempted. She fell and sinned against God. How do we know that?

## Eve was Deceived

Let's take first of all what Paul said about Eve, that she was **deceived** and **“was in the transgression.”**

**“And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression”** (1Tim. 2:14).

Now in light of what God said in the Holy Bible, how in the world could any man in his right mind say that Eve did not sin? That could only happen if a man was trying to justify some heresy or promote his ministry or COVER UP HIS OWN SINS! Don't tell me YOU didn't know when YOU sinned. A minister will rather promote [that is a “buzz” word among many Fundamentalists today, “promotion”] his ministry (church ministries or selling books) rather than rightly divide the word of truth and add to the word of God by putting on a “front,” a form of godliness, by using the word of God as a tool as a “do-gooder” with all the ministries to build a big work and / or make a name for himself and “expand his ministries” while at the same time CORRUPT the true words of God either doctrinally or in practice. There are even Bible-believers getting “hoodwinked” into this net also.

### **“Deceived” and “Evil”**

The word **“deceived”** with all its forms **“deceit,” “deceitful,” “deceitfully,” “deceitfulness,” deceits, “deceivableness,” “deceive,” “deceiver, deceivers, deceiveth,” “deceiving,” “deceivings,”** etc., is mentioned 150 times throughout the entire Bible. If you were to take the concordance and look up any verse with “deceived” and its different forms you will find out that every time the word is NEGATIVE. You will also find out what God says the word “deceived” or any form of that word is associated with.

**“Be not DECEIVED: EVIL communications corrupt good manners”** (1 Corinthians 15:33).

Those in Corinth had the same problem that Eve had way back in the garden. There was some evil communication going on. Eve fell for the deception. Note the evil communications in Corinth were because people were being deceived.

**“Thou givest thy mouth to EVIL, and thy tongue frameth DECEIT”** (Psalm 50:19).

According to Paul, it was because of evil already existing when Satan tempted Eve.

Notice how **“deceitfulness”** has SIN as its “bedfellow.”

**“But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the DECEITFULNESS OF SIN”** (Heb. 3:13).

You say, “Well, these verses are different contexts.” Oh, you mean, sin only begins when YOU want it to be sin. Right? You're on the road to Rome buddy. Hit the road!

Sin is so deceitful that it that comes across real smooth.

**“Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us SMOOTH THINGS, PROPHECY DECEITS”** (Isaiah 30:10).

The prophets during Isaiah’s time were told to speak smooth things and prophecy deceits. Well, prophesying deceits didn’t start during Isaiah’s time. It started when Satan deceived himself (1 Cor. 3:18) and fell and in his own heart and started speaking **“smooth things,” “YEAH…”** (Gen. 3:1) and prophesied to Eve deceits, **“Ye shall NOT surely die”** (v. 4). Satan is a slick, smooth, false prophet.

As you will see, the brethren will “smooth out” Genesis 1:2, by denying its negative blast by hiding behind the “tree” of Romans 5:12.

**“And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him”** (Rev. 12:9).

Now look what the Book says about the serpent of Genesis 3:1. He is a dragon, the devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world.

### **“deceived” and “pride”**

According to the revelation of God, deception is associated with pride.

**“The PRIDE OF THINE HEART hath DECEIVED THEE, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith IN HIS HEART, Who shall bring me down to the ground?”** (Obadiah 1:3).

Now notice how the Holy Bible is a tremendous Book. Look at the issue of the HEART mentioned two times in this verse. That was the problem with Lucifer in Isaiah 14:13. It all started in the heart.

So, according to Holy Writ, Eve sinned by being deceived. Deception is connected with evil. The devil is evil and is a deceiver (Rev. 20:10).

Sin already existed before Adam fell. There was already existing deception, evil and pride BEFORE Adam fell. Although we have not even “scratched the surface” concerning Eve’s sin, hopefully you are getting the point.

Let’s take the next phrase in 1 Timothy 2:14, about Eve **“being in the transgression.”**

**“And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression”** (1 Tim 2:14).

The expression **“in the transgression”** is used only one other time in the scriptures **“IN THE TRANSGRESSION of an EVIL MAN there is a snare: but the righteous doth sing and rejoice”** (Prov. 29:6). Notice how **“transgression”** is connected with **“evil.”**

Now as we go through the scriptures what you should begin to picture in your mind are the connecting references that draw kind of like a tree that begins-

- 1.) With its roots, such as “The principle of First Mention.”
- 2.) Then out comes the trunk.
- 3.) From the trunk the different branches “branch off” into different directions but not separate from the trunk or roots.



- 4.) It is all intertwined. Keep that in mind. Because when God first mentions something in one place (Genesis 1:2) He gives you following cross-references later in another place. He draws you a picture.

Notice how that “transgression” is associated with its “roots” so to say, with an evil man. There is our “man” again, the Anti-Christ in the prophetic sense but in the historic sense way back before Adam fell, the evil man was the fallen cherub that came to Eve as an angel of light, **“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light”** (2 Cor. 11:14).

The first mention in the entire Bible of the word “transgression” is in Exodus 34:7 **“Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and TRANSGRESSION and sin, and that will by no means clear the GUILTY; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children’s children, unto the third and to the fourth generation.”**

Notice that the word **“transgression”** is connected with people that are **“GUILTY.”**

That means Eve was guilty. She sinned. She died spiritually. It was the beginning of a slow physical death also.

Now watch how the Holy Bible defines sin, **“Whosoever committeth sin TRANSGRESSETH also the law: for sin IS THE TRANSGRESSION OF THE LAW.”** (1 John 3:4). Could it be any clearer than that? Eve sinned. She transgressed God’s law.

The word **“transgression(s)”** with all of its different forms, **“transgress,” “transgressed,” “transgressest,” “transgresseth,” “transgressing(s),” “transgressor(s)”** is mentioned 179 in the entire Bible. Not once does the word have anything to do with anything positive. But of course if you were to dote upon Roman 5:12 to prove that sin and death started only with Adam you are covering up close to 500 verses that prove that Eve had sinned before Adam. You are covering up revelation that speaks about the fall of Lucifer and his deceptive work on Eve so that Adam would eventually fall also.

### Eve Was Beguiled

There are yet other verses to prove that Eve sinned before Adam. For example we read in the historical account that the serpent beguiled Eve, **“And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent BEGUILED me, and I did eat”** (Gen. 3:13).

If that weren’t enough what did the apostle Paul say about this matter? **“But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent BEGUILED Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be CORRUPTED from the simplicity that is in Christ”** (2 Cor. 11:3).

Notice how this tree begins to grow. It is rotten to the core. The verses themselves speak.

Now notice something very important in this verse. Not only is it obvious that Eve was beguiled, but beguiling in this verse shows that the mind is CORRUPTED through

the serpent's subtlety. That means that Eve's mind was CORRUPTED. And because of that she CORRUPTED the word of God (2 Cor. 2:17) by misquoting what God said. She was the first human Bible corruptor. We will compare what God said with what she said. First, what God said,

**“And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:**

**But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die”** (Gen. 2:16, 17).

Note the order of the positive and negative-

- 1.) **“Of every tree...”** positive
- 2.) **“...thou mayest...”** positive
- 3.) **“...freely eat”** positive
- 4.) **“but...”** negative
- 5.) **“tree of the knowledge of good and evil...”** negative
- 6.) **“thou shalt NOT eat of it...”** negative
- 7.) **“...for in the day that thou eatest...thou shalt surely die.”** Negative

Notice that God starts out with three positive statements followed by four negative. Yes, in Genesis 2:17 God started out with a positive note but he NEVER ELIMINATES THE NEGATIVE.

Now, what the woman said,

**“And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden:**

**But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die”** (Gen. 3:2, 3).

It would be also appropriate to look closely to what the serpent said, **“Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?”** (Gen. 3:1).

Many have noticed the first word spoken by Satan to man, **“Yeah...”** (Gen. 3:1) which is positive. Thus, the power of positive thinking which is typical of this slick, smooth, modern apostate ecumenical, “sharing,” “Smile, God loves you,” “Christianity.” As we have mentioned above that the Lord, in Genesis 2:17 started out with a positive note but He NEVER ELIMINATES THE NEGATIVE and its WARNINGS.

Satan on the other hand comes as an imitator using the positive to COVER UP the negative. Typical Mafia tactic! He always tries to get people to help him cover up his tracks.

Watch the order-

- 1.) **“Yeah...”** positive first. The devil is a great imitator of God.
- 2.) **“hath God said...”** questioning what God said and also accusing God before Eve. He falsely accuses God to the “brethren.”

- 3.) **“Ye shall not...** negative secondly as fuel for Eve to use as a “gripe” against God.
- 4.) **“...eat of every tree of the garden?** Omits **“freely.”** He was the first being ever to omit what God said. You’ve heard the expression, “He took the words out of my mouth.”

**“And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and TAKETH AWAY the word that was sown in their hearts”** (Mark 4:15).

The words **“TAKETH AWAY”** mean subtraction and subtraction already implies DIFFERENCE.

Have you ever noticed the first recorded word in scripture spoken by a human being on *this* earth? Although Eve was the second human being, the weaker vessel (1 Pet. 3:7), the devil got to her to manipulate the husband. Watch what she says. Eve said, **“we...”** Instead of using the singular word **“thou”** as God said. The Lord said the word **“thou”** four times in the passage **“...THOU mayest freely eat...”** **“THOU shalt not eat...”** **“...that THOU eatest thereof... “THOU shalt surely die.”** It was a PERSONAL THING.

Fear bringeth a snare. She feared Satan’s subtle attack and hid behind the “tree” of **“we.”**

Eve’s position is the basis for the world wide political movement to usher in the Anti-Christ, “we the people,” stuff. **“...let US build US a city and a tower, ... and let US make US a name, lest WE be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth”** (Gen. 11:4). That is the ecumenical movement of the “first person PLURAL,” i.e. “us,” “we,” etc. It is the scholars’ union that speaks in this fashion also to “prove” their position with corrupt manuscripts against believing that God has preserved His word, word perfect in the international language of English. There is a world wide ecumenical movement against absolute truth based on the “we” movement. It was Abraham Lincoln that said, “Government of the people, by the people, and for the people” which is a communist statement to build a government system. The term “the people” was used first by God concerning a wicked movement at Babylon of international socialism, **“And the LORD said, Behold, THE PEOPLE is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do”** (Gen. 11:6).

Sinners have a way dodging personal responsibility by saying, “we” instead of using the first personal pronoun “I.” For instance “We are all sinners” instead of **“I know that I am a sinner.”** The words of God are made light of when you do not make PERSONAL application of a direct personal dealing directed toward YOURSELF. That happens all the time when a preacher preaches in a church congregation and the Holy Spirit makes a “direct hit” towards any and all individuals with whom He Himself is dealing and the sinner will “sidestep” the preaching as if God is dealing with someone else. That is called “passing the buck.” The revelation given to Eve’s sin of “passing the buck” is further expounded upon when she blamed the serpent for her sin (Gen. 3:13).

Eve put herself on the defense by saying “we” instead of doing what the Lord Jesus Christ did when He was tempted, He thrust in the double-edged sword by saying **THOU shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.”** **“THOU shalt worship the Lord thy God, and**

**him only shalt THOU serve**” (Matt. 4:7, 10). Of course He was quoting what was already **“written.”** When Jesus was tempted he quoted the verses and directed them directly to Satan. People in the Former Soviet Russian say, “The best defense is to be on the offense.” Jesus defended His position by offence, **“THOU shalt NOT...”** STRAIGHT and NEGATIVE!

### Eve’s Sin of Omission

Eve was the first human being to misquote the word of God by omitting a word from the original words of God. She omitted the word **“freely.”** She did exactly what the devil did. She subtracted from God’s word. This omission has manifested itself throughout all of humanity.

People omit things in their lives and have had to pay greatly for that throughout the centuries. Corrupt manuscripts such as Vaticanus and Sinaiticus have a great many portions of God’s word omitted let alone perverted. That has produced corrupt Bibles throughout the centuries. Preachers in the Bible and throughout church history have omitted portions of the message that God told them to proclaim. Moses omitted (Exodus 5:1) from God’s message (Exod. 4:22, 23). Because of the sin of omission, it has produced many a heresy and apostasy in every period. Pastor David Hoffman (Rensselaer In.) says,

“Moses and Aaron did not speak the entire message of God to Pharaoh. They avoided the negative aspect: they said nothing about the death of Pharaoh’s firstborn. The compromise of Moses could have caused the additional suffering of his people (Exod. 5:14-18) and this caused internal church troubles. The temptation to avoid the whole counsel of God produces trouble from people inside the church (Exod. 5:20-23), instead of the worldly people outside the church (Acts 20:26-27; 24:14; Col. 1:28, 29).”

Millions omit to trust Jesus Christ as their Savior; they go to hell for that.

Many a heresy is started by the simple omission of the command in 2 Timothy 2:15, to rightly divide the word of truth.

If you look closely in the text before us in Eve’s conversation with the serpent you will also notice that there is more that meets the eye concerning her omission of the word **“freely.”** There are a number of things that are freely given to people today from God such as rain, food, clothing, sunshine, nature, etc. God gives man many things liberally and with liberty for man to freely use, but not to misuse or abuse. But man is never satisfied.

Can you imagine what it must have looked like in the garden, with all the trees surrounding them, all the different kinds of fruit trees, tall ones, short ones, fat ones and thin? It must have been a beautiful sight to see. But, Eve was not satisfied with the liberty that God had given her and her husband. She wanted more. She coveted. She **“saw”** the tree in the midst of the garden, thought it would make her wise; it was most certainly **“good”** for her etc.

There is a law, **“Thou shalt not covet...”** It is the tenth law of the Decalogue (Exodus 20:17) which Paul quotes (Rom. 7). It is similar to the first law of Moses, **“Thou shalt have no other gods before me”** (Exod. 20:3). Ah yes, the gods, **“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil”** (Gen 3:5).

Eve simply was not satisfied with her God-given liberties. She took it upon herself to misuse her liberty. After all, that is how tyrants fool nations, they promise liberty (something positive) but in the end it produces passive automatons that are slaves to the government and elite rich.

**“While they promise them LIBERTY, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage”** (2 Pet. 2:19).

That is exactly what Satan did to Eve. He wanted to “liberate” her. He wanted to free her up from such a “strict” life. She really had it “rough” although she was PROMISED any and all the trees **“every tree...”** of the garden except one. The rule was **“every tree...”** The exception was just one tree, **“But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it...”** The majority was **“every tree...”** i.e. all the trees. The minority was **“But of the tree...”** i.e., just one tree.

Eve was “fed up” with the “majority rules” stuff. She was tired of the majority of manuscripts bearing witness to the truth. Ah yes! That’s it! She was tired of the **“strait... and narrow...way...which leadeth unto life...”** (Matt. 7:14).

Laodicea in anarchy! It is taking the exception and making it the rule; the minority ruling the majority; taking verses that show the exception concerning wine, although it also has rules (1 Tim. 5:23) to overthrow the rule (Prov. 20:1; 23:31; 31:4; Eph. 5:18); taking the opinions of the “best qualified” scholars to overthrow the **“word of a king...”** (Ecc. 8:4); dictionaries, lexicons, commentaries, Greek and Hebrew to overthrow the King’s English Authorized Version of 1611; Acts 2:38 to overthrow the rest of the Bible; Roman 5:12 to justify Eve’s fall, and judgment and cover up her and Satan’s tracks.

A great many Christians have taken the word “liberty” and have abused it to the point that now it is quite difficult to determine whether a man is saved or not. Outside of a personal testimony, most Christians walk, act, and talk as a typical unsaved man or woman of this world. That is Laodicea! (Col. 2:1; 4:13, 15, 16; 2 Timothy 3; Rev. 3:14-21).

Eve was not satisfied, nor content with what was already given her. She sinned and died spiritually. **“But she that liveth in pleasure is DEAD while she liveth”** (1 Timothy 5:6).

Notice still further how Eve perverted the original words of God. She added to the “text” by saying, **“neither shall ye touch it.”** God said nothing of the kind.

When one closely looks at her addition you begin to see from where comes all the “double talk” of the news media, all long winded speeches by modern politicians and the flippant tongue of women and men alike. It’s called “hot air.”

The total words that God spoke in Genesis 2:16, 17 in the English language were 39. The total amount of words that Eve spoke were 44. She omitted from God’s words and then added to the word of God. She said more than was necessary. That is typical of a great many preachers and commentaries today. They leave out the negative aspect of God’s words then they add to them and say a lot of nothing simply to cover up their sin

and Satan's tracks. Eve's additional words did not "help the text out." Her additional text did not make the original words of God any clearer to the contrary muddled them up.

That is typical of a great many Bible commentaries. In other words God's words (all of them in the Authorized Version 1611) are the last words people will revert to concerning final authority in all matters of faith and practice. When it comes to commentaries you find less and less of the practice where the scriptures will interpret the scriptures simply because modern apostates do exactly as Eve did;

- 1.) Started an ecumenical movement which is effeminate by saying "**we**" instead of "**thou.**"
- 2.) "Ducked" the personal responsibility and personal dealings of the Holy Spirit.
- 3.) Subtracted from God's word; she left out "**freely.**" She thought here ministry was more important than the "BOOK."
- 4.) Showed lack of contentment misusing that which was "**freely**" given her. She professed the fundamentals of the faith while at the same time took it upon herself to correct the "scriptures."
- 5.) Added to God's word saying, "**neither shall ye touch it.**"
- 6.) Complained and exaggerated by saying "**neither shall ye touch it...**"
- 7.) Made light of God's severity by saying, "**lest ye die**" instead of "**thou shalt SURELY die.**" She smoothed over the NEGATIVE. She just didn't want to 'rightly divide the word of truth.'

Now to put the capstone on the issue of Eve's sin and her DEATH, what does James say about sin?

**"But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.**

**Then when LUST hath conceived, it bringeth forth SIN: and SIN, when it is finished, BRINGETH FORTH DEATH"** (James 1:14, 15). BAM!!!

The text doesn't say, "But every man EXCEPT EVE..." It says "**EVERY MAN...**" It's kind of like a Calvinist when he reads, "**Who gave himself a ransom FOR ALL, to be testified in due time**" (1 Timothy 2:6) he thinks "for all THE ELECT..." He gets stuck with the word "elect" and can't get off it.

You see when you are tempted; you are drawn away by your OWN lust, and enticed. Then when your own lust hath conceived, (it's a heart matter) it bringeth for SIN. And when sin is "**finished,**" ["You're finished buddy!"] it bringeth for DEATH.

Because of Eve's sin, according to the Holy Bible she died. She didn't die physically at that moment, although it was the beginning of a slow death. She immediately died spiritually. That is the same thing that happened to Lucifer when he fell and that is the same thing that happened to the sons of God when they fell. We'll deal with that when we swim out and go down a little bit 'deeper.'

What does the Bible say about sin and DEATH? Or any form of that word? Now from the "roots," we've got the "trunk." From the "trunk," the "branches" start growing. Another "branch" dealing with Eve's sin is the "branch" of sin and death.

The “branch” of sin and death

**“But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt SURELY DIE” (Gen. 2:17).**

**“Now therefore forgive, I pray thee, my SIN only this once, and intreat the LORD your God, that he may take away from me this DEATH only” (Exod. 10:17).**

Notice how sin is connected with death.

**“Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of SIN UNTO DEATH, or of obedience unto righteousness?” (Rom. 6:16).**

Sin causes death!

**“FOR THE WAGES OF SIN IS DEATH; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 6:23).**

**“For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of SIN AND DEATH” (Rom. 8:2).**

**“THE STING OF DEATH IS SIN; and the strength of sin is the law” (Cor. 15:56).**

**“THEN WHEN LUST HATH CONCEIVED, IT BRINGETH FORTH SIN: AND SIN, WHEN IT IS FINISHED, BRINGETH FORTH DEATH” (Jam. 1:15).**

The tree is “**ROTTEN TO THE CORE!**”

The argument is that if Eve sinned (as Adam sinned) why didn't she drop dead just as soon as she took of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil?

There are in such a case two types of death. The first death is immediately, such as a “**sin unto death**” where a man sinned against the law and God struck him dead immediately. The scriptures show that (2 Sam. 6:1-7), “**And the anger of the LORD was kindled against Uzzah; and God smote him there for *his* error; and there he died by the ark of God.**” (Num. 15:32-36; Lev. 24:10-14).

Secondly where a man sins and at that point “**in the transgression**” (1 Tim. 2:14) begins the *stand* of death, where you are now in a *position* of death where you die “**in your sins**” unless you get saved. You are in a *position* of death. It is a *spiritual* death where now the soul is unsaved and “lost.”

Two things took place the minute Eve disobeyed God by taking thy forbidden fruit –

1. She died *spiritually*. Her spirit with God was SEVERED.
2. She began to die *physically*.

She was now dead spiritually but still living but in the process of physically dying. It would be only a matter of time that she would eventually drop dead, quit breathing.

**“in your sin(s)”**

The phrase **“in your sins”** is mentioned 7 times. Twice in the Gospel of John, once in 1 Corinthians 15:17 and once in Colossians 2:14 and three times in Ezekiel 18:18, 24, 25). Jesus preached to the Pharisees and said, **“...I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come.”** One more time He told them **“...I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins”** (Jn. 8:24).

Jesus warned those Pharisees that if they didn’t get saved they would die in their sins and go to hell. Now let’s make some obvious observations –

1. The Pharisees were already in a *state* of dying because they were ‘growing older.’ They would have to eventually drop dead, physically.
2. They were in the *position* or *STAND* of death, i.e., **“IN [THEIR] SINS,”** they would die. That is why Jesus told them that their father was the DEVIL (Jn. 8:44) in the very same context of the Lord’s sermon.

That is what Ezekiel warned people of, of dying in their sins – that is, dying physically **IN THE STAND OR POSITION OF SIN** that would eventually send them to hell. As a matter of fact that would be based on their faith *AND WORKS* (Ezek. 18:18, 24, 25). Eve was to do good works or else she would DIE.

Now watch closely the phrasing –

**“...even he shall die** (future, physically) **IN HIS INIQUITY”** (spiritually dealing with the soul) (v. 18).

**“...and IN HIS SIN** (spiritually, dealing with the soul) **that he hath sinned, IN THEM shall he die,** (physically, the body) (v. 24).

**“...in them,** (spiritually) **for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die** (physically) (v. 25).

Notice in these verses there are TWO types of death spoken of – a *physical death* that would take place sooner or later, and the *spiritual death* which is immediately upon one sinning.

Spiritual death of the spirit and the loss of the soul –	Physical death
<i>Always</i> and without exception <i>IMMEDIATELY upon any transgression</i>	It could be <i>immediate</i> or <i>in the process of time</i>
Jesus said, <b>“Let the dead</b> (spiritually) <b>bury</b>	<b>their dead.”</b> (those that physically already died.) (Matt. 8:22)
<b>and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit”</b> (Jn. 3:8).	<b>“That which is born of the flesh is flesh;</b>



So, in the case of Adam the Bible says that he died (physically) many years later. But his spiritual death and the loss of his soul happened *immediately*. By the way, he lost the image of God, the Lord Jesus Christ (Heb. 1:2, 3). That is the case for Eve also, because 2 Chronicles reads, “...but **EVERY MAN shall die for HIS OWN SIN.**”

Eve sinned, she was responsible for that transgression for she knew the law but many times misquoted the Lord and “**was IN THE transgression**” (1 Tim. 2:14) which means she WAS GUILTY according to James 1:13-15 “...and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.”

Now the reason why we went through all of these verses (we could go through about 50 more) was simply to prove that if a man thinks that Romans 5:12 proves that there was no sin nor death before Adam, then you’d have to wonder if that man was saved or not. Look at what 2 Chronicles 25:4 reads, “...but **EVERY MAN shall die for HIS OWN SIN.**”

As a matter of fact there are unsaved people in this world that would say that Eve sinned before Adam. But of course if a Christian wants to prove his own point and pervert the words of God he could go to any extreme.

Now, let’s go a bit farther back and discuss sin that was in existence before Adam and Eve were created.

## **Chapter 5**

### **Sin Existed Even Before Adam And Eve Were Created**

We’ve already established the fact that Eve had fallen. With a little cross-reference searching of the scriptures (John 5:39; Acts 17:11) you find that her sin brought forth death. And since her sin brought forth death (James 1:15) then there are numerous other words in the scriptures than run parallel with the words “sin” and “death.” Some of these words are “darkness,” “void,” and “evil” as we will very easily see.

These parallel words are more of the same ROTTEN tree. They are all intertwined, connected and reveal the “missing links” (Luke 11:52) of a doctrine that “cannot be broken” (Jn. 10:35) from “cover to cover.”

#### **“Evil”**

Before we study Adam’s sin and explain Romans 5:12 let’s back up even further and search the scriptures concerning the “evil” that already existed before Adam and Eve were created let alone fell.

Genesis 2:17 **But of the tree of the knowledge of good and EVIL, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof THOU SHALT SURELY DIE.**

That tree was evil and it is connected with death. That tree was not some symbolic tree for it was a literal tree that grew from the ground, **“And out of the ground made the LORD God TO GROW every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil”** (Gen. 2:9).

**“And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and LIVE FOR EVER”** (Gen. 3:22).

Just as a man could eat of a tree and live forever, so also Adam and Eve were warned that if they ate of a certain tree that literally grew from the ground they would SURELY DIE.

Now for further revelation as to with what “evil” is connected let’s take our concordance and simply run references to allow God to speak for Himself, shall we?

**“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and EVIL”** (Gen. 3:5).

“Speaking of the Devil!” Somebody else has ALREADY “had their eyes opened” along with yet others. Who could they be? Where did they come from?

May it be interjected at this point that the word **“gods”** (plural) is mentioned 244 times in the entire Bible. Every time **“gods”** is mentioned it means they ALREADY EXIST (present tense). Look at the verses as they are laid out in Holy Writ (Gen. 31:30, 32; 35:2, 4; Exod. 12:12; 15:11; 18:11; 20:3, 23, etc. THERE IS NOT ONE EXCEPTION TO THE RULE CONCERNING THE FACT THAT EVERY TIME THE WORD **“gods”** IS MENTIONED IT MEANS THEY ALREADY EXIST.

These gods of which the devil was talking about came down from heaven because they were already judged along with Lucifer. Sin always wants company. They too already existed in their fallen state BEFORE Adam “falls for Eve” and takes a bite from the forbidden grape vine tree.

On a more practical side of Adam “falling for Eve” maybe he thought he could “change her life” after they got married like some folks think when they get married.

“You see,” says the Devil, “a little bit won’t hurt. Look around, everybody else is doing it. C’mon, try it. It won’t hurt you. You will really like it. It will make you feel real good about yourself.”

That’s it! Many a time a woman “falls” for some lazy bum thinking that the marriage will save the joker. Bad call! The exception proves the rule.

Well, here’s Hovind, Morris, and others thinking that sin started with Adam. They missed the blessing of the revelation from God Almighty showing you today how that a man falls for a woman or a woman falls for a man thinking that a marriage will change their spouse’s wicked habits.

Eve was “worldly” already. She “went into the world.” She wanted to try out her God-given “liberty” and exercise her free will. Well, did her husband stand in the gap? Was he able to “hold-up” under pressure? Did he **“utterly [make her words] ‘VOID’ on the day he heard them”** (Num. 30:12, 13, 15)? No he “fell” for her. Now the husband is “shot.” The whole family went down into sin.

These Fundamentalist “creation science leaders” missed out on a scientific fact of what happened before Adam sinned by the very fact that Eve’s sin can be proven by observation today. A man will fall for a woman who is not right with God thinking that “she will change.” Many Christian men have married a worldly woman and “lost their shirt.” Or when a man has gotten saved after a marriage usually a woman will pull the man down and keep him from the will of God simply because he falls for her. That is the same thing over and over. That is true, observable science!

So we have evil in the garden even BEFORE EVE takes a bite of the forbidden fruit, which by the way was not an apple, but of a vine tree.

So now we’ve got “evil” mentioned in Genesis 2:9, 17; 3:5, 22. Other than Genesis 3:22 where Adam and Eve fell and came to know good and evil, the next mention of the word “evil” is in Genesis 6:5, “**And GOD saw that the WICKEDNESS of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts OF HIS HEART was only EVIL continually.**”

The word “evil” is mentioned 532 times in the entire Bible. Here are some facts about “evil”

- 1.) Evil is the source of death “...lest some **EVIL** take me, and I **DIE**” (Gen. 19:19).  
Now don’t pass up that blessing of the revelation of God. According to this verse where there is evil there is death also.  
Here is added revelation (to the first mention of evil) that comes along a bit later in the Bible for you to read. The only question is when a man reads from the beginning of the Bible, will he continue to read to understand further what God may have said earlier about a particular word, phrase or subject? That’s why it is important to prayerfully read, search and study the scriptures with patience. (Rom. 15:4) God will sooner or later open up His words to reveal Himself to you. A Concordance is a great tool to help you find the added revelation. And we are not talking about the Greek and Hebrew translation of words in the back of Strong’s or anybody else’s Concordance.
- 2.) Where there is “evil” there is “JUDGMENT”!!! (Jer. 4:22, 26). We will further discuss this when we go back to Genesis 1:2, a related bone of contention of the anti-gap theorists.
- 3.) God is against them that do evil “**The face of the LORD is against them that do evil**” (Psa. 34:16). This is revelation proving that there was a “Star Wars” in Genesis 1:2.
- 4.) Evil slays the wicked (Psa. 34:21). This shows that Satan was slain, judged by God in Genesis 1:2, for “the wicked” is always connected with “**THAT WICKED,**” the Anti-Christ of 2 Thessalonians 2:8.
- 5.) “**DECEIT is in the heart of them that imagine EVIL...**” (Prov. 12:20). The devil “deceived” Eve. He had deceit in his heart. We found the location of this deceit. It started in Genesis 1:2.
- 6.) It is ultimately God that creates darkness and evil. Because of the fact of His holy laws as a result of sin on the part of angels, sons of God, cherubim, man or any other beings, God JUDGES THAT SIN WITH DARKNESS, “**I form the light,**

**and create darkness: I make peace, and CREATE EVIL: I the LORD do all these things” (Isaiah 45:7).**

In this verse the light can be spiritual light and physical. He gives you light from the scriptures (Psa. 119:105) and He supplies physical light also with the sun, moon and the stars (Gen.1:14-16). Of course there is absolute light from God Himself (Gen. 1:3). The verse also says that God creates darkness. That can be both spiritual and physical darkness. Nonetheless they are both connected with that which is NEGATIVE!

Darkness is a result of God Judging Sin

There is a great truth in the Bible concerning God being the creator of darkness. Unfortunately many of the modern Fundamentalists can't understand this revelation as to how God forms darkness when God Himself is light.

Again let's take some verses in the Bible to show how exactly that works where God, Who is absolute light creates darkness and evil.

In Romans 11:10 **“Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back.”**

Since God is light and in him is no darkness, there must be an answer to why does God create darkness? The truth of the matter is the Lord is the author of the CONSEQUENCE of sin.

In this verse it is God that darkens the eyes. It is much clearer in John 12:40

**“He [God] hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.”**

**“Now therefore go to, speak to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, Thus saith the LORD; Behold, I FRAME EVIL against you, and devise a device against you: RETURN YE NOW EVERY ONE FROM HIS EVIL WAY, and make your ways and your doings good” (Jer. 18:11)**

See here how that the Lord is the author of the consequences of sin. He says, **“I frame evil against you...”** because man's ways are evil, **“return ye now every one from HIS EVIL WAY...”**

God is not evil **“far be it from God, that he should do wickedness; and from the Almighty, that he should commit iniquity”** (Job 34:10), but he is the ultimate mover for evil which comes to men BECAUSE of the evil of man. When the Lord creates evil He only creates a situation that you reap from YOUR WRONG DOING. **“For the work of a man shall he render unto him, and cause every man to find according to his ways”** (Job 34:11).

The weeping prophet, Jeremiah understood that God does not create evil for no reason at all. It is simply a RESULT OF SIN. **“Out of the mouth of the most High proceedeth not evil and good?”** Look at the very next verse, **“Wherefore doth a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his SINS?”** (Lam. 3:38, 39).

Let's look at this principle yet in the Book of Daniel –

**“And he hath confirmed** his words, which he spake against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem.

As *it is* written in the law of Moses, **all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from OUR INIQUITIES, and UNDERSTAND THY TRUTH.”** (Dan. 9:12, 13).

The Bible confirms time after time that God does not ‘create evil’ for no reason at all. Darkness and evil are NOT a part of God’s creation. That is simply an excuse for the ‘creationists’ to justify a young earth and their personal ministries. They forgot the GAP in Genesis 1:2. Nor is the gap a part of evolution. To blame God and pervert verses to try to explain **“the earth [being] without form and void”** and **“darkness upon the face of the deep”** as a part of God’s creation is to not see God as to WHO He is – ABSOLUTE LIGHT. It is also an oversight of the ante-type in Jeremiah 4:23. It is also falsely accusing God of making a ‘mistake.’ And fourthly, it is not seeing darkness for what it really is connected with; evil, sin, judgment, etc.

Practically speaking, when a man sins or does evil, God creates a situation for that man to reap what he sowed. Not only that, God will allow something to happen in the life of the believer to prove his love for God (Gen. 22:12; Job 2:10).

Nobody but a sadist would think that hell is good in the sense of being positive just because God created it. You’ve heard the expression, “Good for him” in the sense of somebody receiving proper punishment whether it be a wicked man going to jail for his crimes or even the devil being thrown into the lake of fire (Rev. 20:10). It means he is getting what he deserves. To say that because it is God that created darkness that it is positive is to pervert the word of God.

Again, God is the ultimate mover for evil. 1 Kings 22 is a good example of how God creates a situation that is reaped because of evil on the part of man. The king of Israel, Ahab gathered the prophets together, about four hundred men and enquired whether he should go against Ramoth-gilead to battle, or forbear (v. 6). He also enquired whether there was another prophet besides the others (v. 6). Well, Micaiah the Lord’s prophet heard that all the other prophets prophesied **“good unto the king with one mouth...”** (v.13). A false prophet, **Zedekiah the son of Chenaanah made him horns of iron: and he said Thus saith the LORD, With these shalt thou push the Syrians, until thou have consumed them”**

**And all the prophets prophesied so, saying, Go up to Ramoth-gilead, and prosper: for the LORD shall deliver it into the kings hand”** (vvs. 11, 12).

Here is another excellent case of the positive overriding the negative causing drastic results – DEATH! “Speaking of the ‘ole devil” **“Yeah...ye shall not die.”** The devil is the original Jehovah Witness; no heller.

When it was Micaiah’s turn to prophesy he agreed with all the other prophets (v. 15) but the king knew that Micaiah was just going along with them but didn’t really tell the truth (v. 16). Micaiah had the discernment to **“answer a fool according to his folly”** (Prov. 26:5) because the Lord was about to do the same thing. Micaiah’s true prophesy was **“let them return every man to his house in peace.”** The king was not to go to battle. Of course the king didn’t like that (vs.18). In verses 19 – 23 the narrative is such that the Lord enquired to create a situation so that the king would be deceived simply because he wanted to be deceived. He already had the revelation from God by the prophet

Micaiah what NOT (negative) to do but he went ahead against the will of the Lord. So here comes the “evil” that God created,

**“And he said, Hear thou therefore the word of the LORD: I saw the LORD sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by him on his right hand and on his left.**

**And the LORD said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner.**

**And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will persuade him.**

**And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so”**

You see, it was the Lord that told the lying spirit to go and prevail to deceive the king.

**“Now therefore, behold, the LORD hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee” (v.23).**

The king disobeyed and went to battle anyway. As a result, **“a certain man drew a bow at a venture, and smote the king of Israel between the joints of the harness...”he died at even: and the blood ran out of the wound into the midst of the chariot.”** (vvs. 34, 35).

So the king got it “in the neck” as they say. He received evil for his evil attitude. He tried to “do away” with the prophet of God (vvs. 26, 27) not knowing he was “doomed.” He got the evil that was coming to him. The Lord was behind all of that.

**“Having the understanding DARKENED, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart” (Eph. 4:18).**

Notice how a man’s understanding is darkened; for two reasons-

- 1.) **“through the ignorance that is IN THEM.”**
- 2.) **“because of the blindness of the HEART”**

And who was the first being that had heart trouble??? Well of course Lucifer Isaiah 14:12, 13; Ezek. 28:14 and it is connected with **“HAVING THE UNDERSTANDING DARKENED...”** And according to Holy Writ, our Authorized Version of 1611, the “first mention” or “root” of a rotten tree of **“darkness”** STARTS IN GENESIS 1:2.

The word darkness is the same word as darkened. One is a noun, the other a verb, but both the same. **“Darkness”** explains what something is; while **“darkened”** is what happened to something or somebody. The two are inseparable.

The following verses show that the physical things that are visible to the eye are to reveal to us the kind of God, He really is. The creation of God is to reveal Who God is, **“For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse” (Rom. 1:20).**

**“And the earth was without form, and void; and DARKNESS was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters” (Gen. 1:2).**

**“And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the DARKNESS” (Gen. 1:4).**

**“And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the DARKNESS: and God saw that it was good” (Gen. 1:18).**

**“And when they cried unto the LORD, he put DARKNESS between you and the Egyptians, and brought the sea upon them, and covered them; and your eyes have seen what I have done in Egypt: and ye dwelt in the wilderness a long season” (Josh. 24:7).**

There was literal darkness between the nation Israel and the Egyptians. The darkness covered them. This is in type what happened in Genesis 1:2. There was both a physical and also a spiritual darkness.

**“For, behold, the DARKNESS shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee” (Isa. 60:2).**

**“A day of DARKNESS and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick DARKNESS, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, even to the years of many generations” (Joel 2:2).**

It will be a “dark day” for those who are in spiritual darkness.

**“And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer DARKNESS: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth” (Matt. 25:30).**

There is a physical place called outer darkness where there will be real weeping and gnashing of teeth for those that reject God in the person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Returning back to Genesis 8:22 notice that **“every imagination of the thoughts of man’s heart was only evil continually.”** As evil was a heart issue then, so it is today. Where do we find the first being having heart problems? In Isaiah 14:13 we read, **“For thou hast said IN THINE HEART, I will ascend into heaven...”**

Now here is some strong doctrine for you to get that even a child can understand. In the International language of English, there are two words that look alike with the exception of one letter. Take the word evil, spelled e-v-i-l. Now add the letter “d” to the beginning of that word and you have d-e-v-i-l, DEVIL. Now you should learn this lesson and learn it well that the devil is evil and evil starts with him, that is, he is the essence of evil. Now wasn’t that difficult!? Now where did the devil come from?

Now let’s back up even further, BEFORE **“the heavens and the earth, which are now,”** (2 Pet. 3:7).

We know of course that **“in the beginning was the Word...”** Jesus Christ already was, the eternal God. So Jesus Christ was already there in the beginning of His creative works of Genesis 1:1. (Proverbs 8:22, 23).

But there was also something else that was before God’s creative work in Genesis 1:1 – the sons of God.

**“Whereupon are the foundations (Gen. 1:1) thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof;**

**WHEN the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?”** (Job 38:6, 7).

The fact of the matter is that **“when the morning stars sang together”** (they already existed) THEN God began his creation, before the foundation of the earth was laid these spiritual beings, the “sons of God” had ALREADY EXISTED. They already existed BEFORE Genesis 1:2. When God created the heaven and the earth the spirit world (Col. 1:16) had witnessed God’s creative work of Genesis 1:1.

Now the anti-gappers say, “What are you doing talking about this gap already? You haven’t proved your point that there was a gap.”

Okay, just “hold your horses.” We haven’t gotten to the “meat of the message” yet. I just thought I’d throw that in there since you anti-gap theorists already take it for granted that there was no gap based on Romans 5:12 and “slap everything together” from Genesis 1:1 to 2:25.

Now, back to the text-

**“For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him”** (Col. 1:16).

The apostle Paul reveals the fact that there were thrones, dominions principalities and powers that already existed before Genesis 1:1 BEFORE THE GAP, before Adam and Eve were created.

Many other verses prove the fact that there were other beings created before Adam and Eve were created – the “sons of God,” including another **“son,”** and that was Lucifer. Note the dominions of the created spirit beings –

Isaiah 14:12 **How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, SON of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!**

We realize, **“didst weaken the nations”** is a *future* event but we still cannot deny the fact that Satan is a fallen creature ALREADY!

Lucifer here is called the **“son of the morning.”** Before his fall Satan was **“the cherub that covereth.”** **“Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire”** (Ezekiel 28:14).

Satan had power, dominion as spoken of by Paul in Colossians. There were four cherubs around the throne and then there was the fifth cherub that covereth. Satan certainly had dominion, (second only to the triune God) along with the **“sons of God”** which most certainly denotes dominions of power. In Colossians 1:16 we read **“thrones”** (plural), **“dominions”** (plural) **“principalities”** (plural) and **“powers”** (plural).

The representation of these powers are manifest among governments of this world and the **“world to come”** (Matt. 12:32; Heb. 6:5) by thrones, dominions, principalities



and powers that be, **“Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God”** (Romans 13:1).

And wherever you have thrones, there are kingdoms. Kingdoms on this earth or of this world are also a representation of that which is invisible in the spirit world, **“Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.**

**For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse”** (Rom. 1:19, 20).

**“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places”** (Eph. 6:12).

**“And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it”** (Col. 2:15)

Just as there were spirit beings, principalities and powers before the flood during Noah’s day that physically manifested themselves, that continued *after* the flood, so also were there spirit beings, principalities and powers before Lucifer’s fall, but continued after God had judged them.

So in short we have –

- 1.) The Son of God, the eternal triune God, the Godhead always existing in the eternal past (Gen. 1:1; Prov. 8:22; John 1:1-3).
- 2.) A creation of cherubs, **“the cherub that covereth”** (Ezek. 28:15).
- 3.) The **“sons of God”** (Job 38:6, 7).
- 4.) The creation of thrones, dominions, principalities and powers.
- 5.) After these were created then God created the physical heaven and the earth of Genesis 1:1.

#### Why all the Cross-Reference Searching of the Scriptures?

We have been discussing Eve’s sin. For us to understand Adam’s sin, throughout many portions of scripture as we have seen uncover, or reveal just what sins they were that caused Eve to sin. And once the scriptures reveal that we can go back even further to find out what the sins were that caused the **“son of the morning”** (Isa. 14:12) or the **“cherub that coverth”** to fall.

The Bible may simply state an historical fact without all the details at first as in Genesis 1:1-2. It takes searching of the scriptures (Jn. 5:39) to make to proper conclusion based on the progressive revelation given about a certain instance or subject and where a particular word is located in one place of the Bible and later mentioned in another showing with what word it is intertwined or associated. That is called progressive revelation. If you don’t keep moving with the Book it will leave you “behind the times.”

The Lord is not obligated to show you everything about any given subject at first. There is no possible way to “dump the whole load on you.” You couldn’t handle it all at

first. Jesus said, **“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now”** (John 16:12). Even after the Lord Jesus Christ dealt with a number of issues with His disciples in John chapters 13 and 14 he ends the 14<sup>th</sup> chapter with **“Arise, let us go hence”** (John 14:31). He was always on the move, but knew when to rest, had direction and always had a lot more to give his disciples. He gave them much more revelation in chapters 15 and 16 before He prayed in chapter 17.

It’s like a father that tells his boy about something but not everything. The more the boy enquires and as time goes by the father further explains things in more detail. Then you get the whole picture with all of its details. There is no possible way that a caring mother would give a little baby strong meat. But the baby must grow up sooner or later. Amen?!

## Chapter 6 The Fall Of Satan

We have established the fact that Eve sinned and had already fallen before Adam sinned. That overthrows the heresy of the creationists that there was no death until Adam. The apostle James tell us,

**“But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. THEN WHEN LUST HATH CONCEIVED, IT BRINGETH FORTH SIN: AND SIN, WHEN IT IS FINISHED, BRINGETH FORTH DEATH”** (Jam. 1:14, 15).

Lust comes from within, **“From whence come wars and fightings among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members?”** (Jam. 4:1). Lust comes from within!

The first “Star Wars” was not something that Hollywood produced. They’re a little late to say the least. The first “Star Wars” took place before God’s RE-CREATIVE acts. It all started when Lucifer lusted in his heart. You see, according to James a man is tempted, and drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Satan was ENTICED. Sin loves company so he began to “entice” others. Misery loves company. That lust CONCEIVED. It is like a woman that is bearing a child. First of all there had to be a CONCEPTION; something from the outside joining with that which is WITHIN. Then takes place the CONCEPTION. After the conception of a child it is brought forth. After the conception of sin it brings for DEATH.

From this verse we can better understand what was the problem with Lucifer. He had heart problems.

**“For thou hast said IN THINE HEART, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north”** (Isa. 14:13).

**“Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found IN THEE.”** (Ezek. 28:15).

God created the cherub that covereth, but it was the devil that “created himself” to become evil. He sinned, **“till iniquity was found IN THEE.”**

### Pre-Adamite Eden (Ezekiel 28:13)

In the Book of Ezekiel we find Lucifer's fall spoken of in the past. Many of the young earth creationists put the fall on the sixth day after the creation of Adam and Eve. They overlook the fact that there stood in the garden "**the tree of knowledge of good and evil,**" even if the tree was placed there after Adam was created (2:9). That does not annul the fact that evil already existed. It simply hadn't entered into "**the heavens and the earth which are now**" (2 Pet. 3:7). And though Eve fell before Adam God placed the responsibility on the federal head, Adam. That was already thoroughly discussed earlier.

Also, you couldn't say that the tree was just a symbol of evil until fruit had been taken from it. That would be absolutely wrong. Also, when reading Ezekiel chapter 28 it is quite obvious that no earthly king of Tyrus was in Eden, as was this angel, nor does this Eden refer to Adams Eden, although Lucifer was in it also (Gen. 3; 2 Cor. 11:3).

Concerning the different gardens in the Bible, Wilmington's Guide to the Bible (Tyndale House Publishers, Inc) page 885, reads thus –

1. The garden of God (Ezek. 28:11-17).
  - a. Was the home of Lucifer before he became Satan.
  - b. Had stones of fire.
  - c. Was headquarters for God's holy mountain.
  - d. Witnessed sin enter the universe."
  
2. The Garden of Eden (Gen. 2:8-3:24)
  - a. Was the home of the first man.
  - b. Was located in Mesopotamia to the east.
  - c. Had all sorts of beautiful trees, including
    - (1) The tree of life.
    - (2) The tree of the knowledge of good and evil.
  
  - d. Was watered by four rivers.
  - e. Witness sin enter the human race."

Wilmington recognizes the Garden of Eden in Genesis 2:8-3:24 as *DISTINCT* from the Garden of God.

### The time of Lucifer's Fall

Ezekiel 28:15 reads "**Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.**"

The time of his iniquity was when he rebelled against God to exalt himself (Isa. 14:14). The time of his corruption and sin was surely before the days of Adam, for Lucifer *was already a fallen creature at the time he came to Adam's Eden* (Gen. 2; 2 Cor. 11:4). Ezekiel further expounds what happened in Isaiah 14:12-14.

## The Mountain of God (Ezek. 28:16)

The “**anointed cherub that covereth**” (Ezek. 28:14) “**wast upon the holy mountain of God**” and also “**walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire**” is not the same place where Lucifer was when he tempted Eve. The mountain of God was the place where Lucifer had his kingdom and throne before Adam’s time. No angel was in any holy mountain of God when an earthly king of Tyrus ruled, so the reference is to a time well before Adam and Eve were even created. Here we have an insight into the position of Lucifer before his fall, and a revelation regarding the cause of his fall (vss. 13-18). The term, “**the mount(ain) of God**” occurs 7 times (vvs. 14, 16; Exod. 3:1; 4:27; 18:5; 24:13; 1 Kings 19:8). The mount of the Lord also occurs 7 times (Gen. 22:14; Num. 10:33; Psa. 24:3; Isa. 2:3; 30:29; Mic. 4:2; Zech. 8:3).

Let’s make some very important observations –

1.) All these scriptures do not refer to the same mountain *in the same place*, as can be seen from the various passages. There is no passage in the entire Bible to confirm that the Garden that Adam and Eve were in had a MOUNTAIN in it.

2.) Not only that, just because Ezekiel mentions that Lucifer was in the garden of Eden where Adam and Eve were, it is NOWHERE can it be proven that his fall was *after* the creation of Adam and Eve.

3.) Let’s take a close look at the passage in Ezekiel 28. You’ll find in verses 13 and 15 the following phrase, “**in the day that thow wast created.**” There is no possible way to put the fall of Satan during the time when Adam and Eve were in their garden simply because “**the cherub that covereth**” (v. 14) was created *BEFORE* Adam and Eve ever showed up. Remember Job 38:7? “**When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?**” That was before Genesis 1:1. You’re dealing with a creation (of the sons of God) and the pre-Adamic world that isn’t even close to the event of the creation of Adam and Eve. We’re talking about two different worlds and two different “periods” that are divided by a FLOOD.

4.) Genesis 1:2 SEPARATES the events of the creation of the sons of God, (“**the cherub that covereth**” (Ezek. 28:14), from Adam and Eve.

i. Genesis 1:2 *separates* the place where the cherub walked – “**in the midst of the stones of fire**” (vss. 14, 16), “**the holy mountain of God**” from the Garden of Adam and Eve for their garden had no “stones of fire.” It was full of trees.

### “the midst” “fire”

If you were to take your concordance and look up “the midst” and “fire” you would immediately see the following verses –

Ezekiel 1:4 And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.

Notice that “the midst” and “fire” are what originated “OUT OF THE NORTH” from HEAVEN, and not from this earth. Ezekiel 1:4 is a description in type of the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ (Ezek. 1:28).

Another reference where you’ll find “the midst” and “fire” is in Deuteronomy 4:11 “And ye came near and stood under THE MOUNTAIN; and the mountain burned with fire unto the midst of heaven, with darkness, clouds, and thick darkness.”

Notice there is addition revelation with the mention of “the mountain.” This is what took place when the Lord appeared unto Israel and Mount Sinai. That is a type of what goes on in heaven. The mountain is a type of the figure of the universe. At the top of it goes forth “fire” like a volcano and in the midst of this fire, lightning and smoke is the Lord Jesus Christ who is covered by a cloud of fire and water which forms a cloud.

If that weren’t enough, the First Mention Principle applied to the word “fire” is Genesis 19:24 “Then the LORD rained upon Sodom and upon Gomorrah brimstone and FIRE from the LORD out of heaven.”

Notice that “fire” is “from the LORD out of HEAVEN.”

ii. The *location* of the events of Lucifer’s fall is “**the sides of the north**” (Isa. 14:13). This is *distinct* from Adam’s “garden of Eden” which was on *this* earth.

5.) Also, you’ll not read anywhere in the scriptures that the Garden of Eden of Adam and Eve had “**the holy mountain of God**” (v.14).

Notice when God cast Satan out “I will cast thee as profane OUT OF THE MOUNTAIN OF GOD: AND I WILL DESTROY THEE O COVERING CHERUB, FROM THE MIDST OF THE STONES OF FIRE” (v.16).

6.) If that weren’t enough, the cross reference to any kind of mountain that had anything to do with the fall of Satan wouldn’t be anywhere close to a location on this earth. For Isaiah 14:13, 14 pinpoints exactly where his fall did NOT take place – in the garden of Eden near where Adam and Eve were. Read Isaiah 14:13, and 15 again -

**For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD: I will sit also upon the MOUNT OF THE CONGREGATION, in the sides of the north:**

**14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.**

Let’s make some very obvious observations –

i. The cherub said, “I will ASCEND”

That means he wanted to go UP. That has nothing to do with anything on this earth.

ii. He said, “I will ascend INTO HEAVEN.”

That is very clear. Heaven is not the earth nor even near it.

iii. He said, “I will exalt my throne ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD.”

Nothing could be clearer than that. Anybody knows that the stars are not even close to this earth. To think, as Kent Hovind thinks, that the cherub fell while on this earth in the Garden of Eden and AFTER Adam was created is a rather silly interpretation of the scriptures.

iv. The cherub also said, “I will sit also upon the MOUNT of the congregation.”

Anybody who has seriously and patiently studied the scriptures by taking a concordance and running all the references concerning “mountain” and “mount” will obviously come to the conclusion (as all the commentators do) that the parallel passage to Ezekiel 28:14 is Isaiah 14:13 “I will sit also upon the MOUNT of the congregation.”

Where would you ever find in the scriptures “**THE MOUNT OF THE CONGREGATION**” having to do with Adam and Eve on this earth IF THERE WAS NOBODY ELSE, as our brethren think? The word “**Congregation**” implies there were other beings existing before Adam and Eve ever existed. They are “**the sons of God**” (Job 38:7).

7.) What about “**IN THE SIDES OF THE NORTH?**” What are you going to do with that? That is worth spending time on the subject of Cosmology which we will go into more detail in Chapter 16. Let’s mention in short just a couple things about this “**north.**” This “**north**” is UP, straight up.

Look at Psalm 48:2 “**Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is mount Zion, on the sides of the north, the city of the great King.**”

This is the only other place in the entire Bible where it is written, “**the sides of the north...**” The reference in Psalm 48:2 could NOT possibly be concerning the city in Jerusalem on this earth. There are no “**palaces**” (v. 3) on Mount Zion in earthly Jerusalem. For it had only one palace (1 Chron. 29:1). “**The city of the great King**” is the “**mount Sion**” of Hebrews 12:22, where “**the heavenly Jerusalem**” is located “**above**” (Gal. 4:26) – “**But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.**”

A keen eye will notice that there are *two* Mount Zions and *two* Jerusalems in the Scriptures, and if you do not “**rightly [divide] the word of truth**” (2 Tim. 2:15), YOU WILL END UP A DESTRUCTIVE CRITIC of the Bible instead of a “**workman that needeth not to be ashamed.**”

So in Ezekiel 28 we’re not dealing with the Garden of Eden that Adam and Eve were in when Satan fell. We’re dealing with a totally different garden at a totally different time previous to Eve’s and Adam’s fall in their garden.

Now that we have established where evil came from we need to “tie in” all the references that have to do with that root or roots. Again, we are allowing God Himself, as a true artist paint the picture before our eyes to see how the roots, trunk and all of its branches are intertwined, connected and related to the same rotten tree.

Satan is determined to entice people through lust,

**“Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through LUST” (2 Pet. 1:4).**

**“But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the LUST of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities” (2 Pet. 2:10).**

These verses further show to prove that Satan lusted, fell, and was judged during the **“world that was then”** (2 Pet.3:6). When God re-created the heavens and the earth (Gen. 1:3-31), and after Adam and Eve were created **“the heavens (plural) and the earth, which are now,”** (2 Pet. 3:7), [NOTE – THAT MAKES TWO DIFFERENT WORLDS] the serpent sowed the seed of sin into the heart of Eve. He caused her to lust, and conceive sin in her own heart.

Have you ever heard the expression “Out of this world!?” Well, don’t you know how the Lord can “pull the wool” over the eyes of the modern creationist movement and use unsaved, pagan atheists to give you absolute TRUTH? “Out of THIS world!”

#### When Sin Originated

Kent Hovind along with other non-gap theorists such as Mr. Tabb tries to explain the gap-fact away by guessing Satan’s fall on one of the days of the six-day creation AFTER the fact that **“the earth was WITHOUT FORM AND VOID; and DARKNESS was upon the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2).

Without a thorough study of the scripture you could be easily convinced that verse 2 of Genesis 1 was simply part of day one of the 6-day creation week. But that could be proven to be a rather lazy, sloppy approach to the Bible.

Tim LaHaye and Thomas Ice, two more non-gap theorists say thus,

Satan and the angels were LIKELY [Get that!] created during the six days of creation...Satan fell somewhere between Genesis chapters 2 and 3. (LaHaye, Tim, Ice, Thomas, Charting the End Times (Eugene, Oregon: Harvest House Publishers, 2001)

Who couldn’t take a wild guess like that? “...Satan fell somewhere between Genesis chapters 2 and 3.” Thank you for such an accurate “somewhere.”

That’s a total blunder of interpretation of the scriptures. How could you miss Job 38:4-7? Very easily when the heart is not in position to receive such a revelation after you denied a gap in Genesis 1:2, and rejected the Biblical, NEGATIVE command to DIVIDE (2 Tim. 2:15) because you thought that there was no judgment and fall of them, not even their existence well before Adam was created, because you thought that Romans 5:12 meant there was no sin, death nor judgment before Adams’s existence. BLUNDER!

**“Where wast thou when I laid the FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH? Declare, if thou hast understanding.**

**Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? Or who hath stretched the line upon it?**

**Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or WHO LAID THE CORNER STONE THEREOF;**

**WHEN THE MORNING STARS SANG TOGETHER, AND ALL THE SONS OF GOD SHOUTED FOR JOY?**

When the corner stone of the foundations of the earth was laid the sons of God were already PRESENT.

Now to show that Satan's connection with the sons of God was at Genesis 1:2 we must make search of the connection or the "missing link" of verse 2 of the entire Bible and allow God's progressive revelation reveal to us with what each word or phrase is "linked" to.

**"And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters."**

Putting all the evidence together, it is obvious that the *original* earth, before man was created, was the dwelling place of the cherubim and angels (Ezek. 28:13; 31:9-18). Lucifer, Eden's governor, rebelled against God (Is.14; Ezek.28) and received judgment. That means he died spiritually along with the subsequent cursing and physical judgment of the planet. That is the type of a future judgment of the earth when it will become "**without form and void**" (Jer. 4:23) and its pending judgment when there will be a re-creation (2 Pet. 3:6-13). The *reason* for both judgments does not alter – sin. After many centuries or millennium the earth, created "to be inhabited" (Isa. 45:17-18), was renewed with man, a creature of less stature than its original custodians (Heb. 2:7).

Lucifer was already in a fallen, a disembodied state (Gen. 3:4-5). He is not of this world but of the "**world that then was**" (2 Pet. 3:6) just as Jesus Christ is not of this world. Lucifer is the "**god of this world**" (2 Cor. 4:4), and his angels are called "gods" (Gen. 3:5), and when he sinned he "ascended up" (Isa. 14:13) to heaven he was judged because of pride (Job 41:34).

Now, the most obvious place the scriptures speak of when Lucifer fell could only be in Genesis 1:2. The young earth promoters don't have a clue as to when that happened. Their best guess is a "somewhere."

As a result of Satan's fall God had to separate His creation by DIVIDING it from His light. That is quite obvious in Genesis 1:4.

"The magnitude of Satan's fall calls for a Genesis 1:2 time placement. Satan was so powerful, that he caused the entrance of sin into the universe. This explains the division between the light and the darkness, and the glaring separation of God from His creation. If there was no gap, *why* did God separate the earth, and the "heavens" from Himself? Why did He plunge a perfect and sinless earth and universe into utter darkness when He created it? Answer: He did not. Even though the separation between God and man occurred in the garden of Eden, the separation of God, His earth, and the physical universe occurred in Gen. 1:2"

(Dispensationalism, David E. Walker, p. 239)



## When Did God Make Hell?

There is yet something else that the anti-gap theorists do not discuss and that is the matter of hell? When did God make hell? Let's start with this – how can you have a perfect earth and yet have a tree that is EVIL (Gen. 2:9) in the Garden? Although “**darkness**” is first mentioned in Genesis 1:2, its many forms, whether spiritual or literally physical are mentioned throughout scripture. We can never nullify the method of Biblical interpretation by First Mention Principle. The fact of the matter is that although the “**darkness**” of 2 Pet. 2:4 and 2:17 (that is connected with hell beneath) has to do with angels that sinned during Noah's flood. That does not nullify God creating hell when Satan fell. The angels that fell during Noah's flood are the ante-type of what happened in Genesis 1:2. Both events are connected with “darkness.” The first mention of “darkness” is Genesis 1:2. Plain and simple!

So then, numerologically, scripturally (comparing scripture with scripture), applying the law of First Mention, Genesis 1:2 is the most Biblical, logical answer as to when God created hell in the heart of the earth. After all, He did create hell for the DEVIL and his angels (Matt. 25:41). And since the number “2” (Gen. 1:2) is the number of division, God, in the end DIVIDES the wicked sinner from the saved people. The unsaved go to hell; the saved to heaven. Amen!

Other than THAT, your guess would be as shaky as any evolutionists that is trying to convince you how the “**WORLDS**” ([plural], Heb. 11:3) and the ‘underworld’ came into being. He does not have the slightest idea. That is exactly where our ‘creationist’ brethren are concerning the Gap and the creation of hell. They are in the ‘dark.’

### Chapter 7

#### “the earth...it was without form and void”

We can prove beyond a shadow of doubt that the earth *BECAME* to this miserable condition in Genesis 1:2, without any Hebrew language, but by simply taking the concordance of the Holy Bible (KJV 1611) and looking up where the Holy Spirit has written the very same words concerning the earth elsewhere.

In Jeremiah 4:23 we read, “**I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.**”

Although Jeremiah 4:23 is dealing with the judgment of God in a Tribulation context it is still the KEY verse (Luke 11:52) to explain the phrase “**And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness...**” in Genesis 1:2, at least part of it. No matter what the brethren think or say, don't let go of that verse. You are commanded to “**Hold fast the form of sound words**” (2 Timothy 1:13). Notice that we are dealing with God's judgment upon sin and his dealing with the nation Israel in a future event called the Great Tribulation.

Now this is what you need to get and not let Satan (Mark 4:15) or some “**bird**” (Luke 8:5) **take away the word that was sown in your heart**” just because the event is doctrinally future;

1. Since the earth is obviously not **“without form, and void”** now, IT WILL BE during the Tribulation. That means that it WASN'T without form and void at one time before God's judgment “hit.” It will BECOME without form and void.

2. After that event has taken place IT TOO will be PAST just like Genesis 1:2. That is the “crux” of the interpretation of Genesis 1:2.

### Biblical Methods of Interpretation vs. Man's explanation

Up to this point and throughout the rest of this work we will show you the difference between the Biblical methods of interpretation verses man's explanation of a text. What we have been doing up to this point is simply showing where God, by the Holy Spirit has written in one portion of the scriptures and has written the very same words in another portion of **“the holy scriptures”** (Rom. 2:1; 2 Tim. 3:15) so that God could make Himself clear. That stands in contrast to man's explanation of a text. There is a BIG difference.

Now for the first method of interpretation there is 1 Corinthians 2:13 which reads, **“Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”**

That means the **“words which man's wisdom teacheth”** will be some kind of an explanation of a text, WITHOUT TAKING YOU TO ANOTHER PASSAGE THAT WILL CONFIRM OR EXPLAIN THAT TEXT. For instance, a modern creationist, Fundamentalist will explain Genesis 1:2-4 as such,

“God created the heaven and the earth 6,000 years ago. During that creation PROCESS there was darkness upon the earth. Everything was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep.”

According to that explanation you've got a bit of evolution in it, “During that creation PROCESS there was darkness...” The Bible never states that creation was a “process.”

Let's get back to Biblical interpretation. When you take a word, verse or part of a verse and find that in another portion of scripture, where they read identically, God Himself expounds the passage. That is the wisdom by **“which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”** The Holy Ghost Himself wrote those words in both places for you to understand Him. And that is exactly what the Fundamentalists will NOT do concerning Genesis 1:2 and Jeremiah 4:23.

We will deal with the two other methods of interpretation (Isa. 28:9-13 and 2 Timothy 2:15) as needed and as we go along in this book.

### Context makes a big difference

The anti-gap theorists deny you of going to Jeremiah 4:23 simply because they say that the context is future. Therefore throw the text “out” when it comes to interpreting Genesis 1:2. Don't do anything of the kind. Satan wants you to get rid of (Hello Eve!) the only other REVELATION of what the Holy Spirit Himself has written in Genesis 1:2 and he'll use Christians to accomplish his task. If he can't get you to subtract from the word

of God in print, as all false “bibles” and corrupt manuscripts have it, he will get you to “use” your King James Bible, but convince you to cut out portions of scripture so that the scriptures will not interpret the scriptures (1 Cor. 2:13). It’s that simple. That is, if a man has not developed a *habit* of “comparing spiritual things with spiritual” then his temptation will be to jump to conclusions about any given doctrine in the Bible. And concerning Jeremiah 4:23 the devil is using Fundamentalists to cause other Christians to ignore and reject revelation bit by bit and “eat away” like a cancer at the proper method of interpretation of the scriptures. It was Eve that subtracted from the word of God. She was the first human to be a Bible corrupter. It is a “woman’s movement” (Eve) that leads all heresy back to Rome, the Mother of Harlots. Of course too many men have “fallen for Eve.” They have become “nai-Eve.”

Now let’s make some more very careful observations about Jeremiah 4:23. Look at the immediate context of verses that follow v. 23.

3.) Although Jeremiah 4:23 is written of a future event it is written AS IF IT HAD ALREADY PAST. Lo and behold, look at verses 23, 24, 25, and 26.

v. 23 **I BEHELD** (PAST TENSE) **the earth, and, lo, it was** (PAST TENSE) **without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had** (PAST TENSE) **no light.**

v. 24 **I BEHELD** (PAST TENSE) **the mountains, and, lo, they trembled,** (PAST TENSE) **and all the hills moved** (PAST TENSE) **lightly.**

v. 25 **I BEHELD,** (PAST TENSE) **and, lo, there was** (PAST TENSE) **no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled** (PAST TENSE).

v. 26 **I BEHELD,** (PAST TENSE) **and, lo, the fruitful place was** (PAST TENSE) **a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were** (PAST TENSE) **broken down** (PAST TENSE) **at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger.**

They are all written in the PAST TENSE. Which is telling you that when it happens (2010 + years), it too will be HISTORY! It is simply a REPEAT of GENESIS 1:2 because it too is HISTORY – PAST TENSE.

God is not bound to time. He sees the beginning from the end and the end from the beginning, and to deny, or change the tenses, or reject the light and the revelation given in Jeremiah to understand God’s dealings in Genesis 1:2 is ABSOLUTELY SATANIC! It is quite possible for you to “**hold the truth in unrighteousness**” (Rom. 1:18). That is exactly what is happening when you deny the revelation of God when it’s right in front of you.

When interpreting scripture it is very important to look at the context for a text without a context is a pretext. Look at the context of Jeremiah 4:23 in verses 22-31 and let’s make yet, some more very specific observations noticing the following words and phrases; for the following phrases are the “**KEY of knowledge**” (Luke 11:52) [or for our ‘creationist’ brethren “missing links”] which unlock revelation to better understand Genesis 1:2. We are dealing with PROGRESSIVE REVELATION here in Jeremiah. It is added revelation to help explain (without any human explanation) what God Himself said and did in Genesis 1:2.

“**...they are wise to do EVIL...**” (v.22) Notice that this future judgment is a result of “**EVIL.**” We already established the fact that evil started with the devil sinning and that evil brings upon it the JUDGMENT OF GOD. Look at verse 26 and notice the judgment

of God because of the evil, **“and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his FIERCE ANGER.”**

Just because within the context of Jeremiah 4:23 there is mentioned “mountains,” “hills,” (v. 24) “wilderness,” (v. 26) “cities,” “birds” (v. 25) that gives reason for some to believe that there were people in Genesis 1:1. There is no basis for that. Let’s not forget also that Jeremiah is dealing with the future. Man as such, does not show up in the scriptures until after the re-creation (Gen. 1:27; 2:7). So the context of Jeremiah 4:23, along with Isaiah 14:17 is obviously the same as that of Revelation 12:3-10; it is the Great Tribulation, which is yet future. We are interested in *THE REASON WHY THE JUDGMENT IS COMING IN THE GREAT TRIBULATION???* The answer is in verse 26, **“THE PRESENCE OF THE LORD, AND BY HIS FIERCE ANGER.”**

4.) Now we have found one of the greatest treasures in Holy Writ that reveal the “missing link” to Genesis 1:2. Our text says **“they are wise to do EVIL.”** Let’s put some things together-

A. Genesis 1:2 says, **“And the earth was without form, and void...”**

Jeremiah 4:23 says, **“I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void...”**

B. The context of Jeremiah 4:23 SHOWS why the Holy Spirit had written in both places the same thing, BECAUSE THERE WAS EVIL PRESENT, AND THAT BROUGHT ABOUT JUDGMENT, THE **“FIERCE ANGER”** (v. 26), plain and simple. And if anybody tries to get you to turn away from Jeremiah 4 just because it is future is Satan’s attempt to get you to break from the cross-reference to Genesis 1:2. **“In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall EVERY WORD BE ESTABLISHED”** (2 Cor. 13:1).

5.) **“and the heavens, [plural] and they had NO LIGHT”** (v. 23) Notice that right in the very same verse where the earth was without form and void, that THE HEAVENS is speaking of more than one heaven, **“HEAVENS”** (plural). The significance of that is “heavens” would be something including the second heaven. We’re not dealing with just the earth’s atmosphere, but with Satan’s territory also, the second heaven.

6.) Not only that, the word **“heavens”** (plural) is located in 2 Peter 3:5-13 FIVE times and Noah’s flood didn’t involve the heavens (plural) being *destroyed* but only the earth.

7.) Also notice in this very same phrase that the heavens (plural) **“HAD NO LIGHT”** (v. 23). Well, any child can understand that where there is no light there is **DARKNESS**. Now watch this, **“and darkness was upon the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2). There it is, right in front of your face.

Notice further that it is quite clear that this is God’s judgment upon sin by the very fact that God’s **“FIERCE ANGER”** is manifest (v. 26).

Not only that, Jeremiah 4:23 is the second and only other witness in the entire Bible as to what happened in Genesis 1:2 and according to 2 Corinthians 13:1 there needs to be at least two or three witnesses to establish what God said.

Now can you imagine? Here’s Jeremiah preaching the word of God. He must have had a copy of the books of Moses in his hand while foretelling of future judgments

knowing what Moses wrote in Genesis 1:2. So here's Jeremiah preaching one complete negative BLAST from beginning to end – **“abominations,”** (v.1), **“judgment”** (2), **“thorns”** (3), **“evil”** (4), **“destruction”** (6), **“destroyer”** (v. 7), **“waste”** (v. 7), **“fierce anger of the LORD”** (v. 8), **“sword”** (v. 10), **“Woe unto us”** (v. 13), **“wickedness”** (v. 14), **“affliction”** (v. 14), rebellion against the Lord (v. 17), **“destruction upon destruction...”** (v. 20), **“sottish children...”** (v. 22), and then right in the middle of that negative blast against Israel he says, **“I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.”** Now why in the world would he preach so negatively and make application to JUDGMENT mentioning Genesis 1:2? Because that 'ole preacher knew how to make proper application of a previous text (Genesis 1:2) and apply that judgment (Genesis 1:2) to a future judgment – his own sermon in Jeremiah 4.

Now it's all clear why the devil uses modern conservative Christianity; to try to manipulate the true Bible believer to get him to throw out revelation.

- 8.) Jeremiah 4:23 is ADDED revelation as to WHY there was **“darkness upon the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2).
- 9.) Continuing further, notice that the **“HEAVENS ABOVE”** (plural) (v. 28) shall **“BE BLACK.”**

It is as 'clear as day' that the phrase, **“it was without form and void”** means that the earth *will BECOME* without form and void by the simple fact that we, in the church age are not in the Tribulation and won't be, praise the Lord. The heavens are not **“darkness,”** NOW, and **“the fierce anger of God”** is not unleashed NOW (v. 26), that the **“heavens above”** are not **“BLACK”** NOW, but they WILL BE! And when that has happened it too will be PAST HISTORY, JUST LIKE GENESIS 1:2. And the fact that verses 23-26 are written in the past tense means that it is as good as DONE, HISTORY, JUST AS GENESIS 1:2 IS HISTORY!!!

Dr. Tabb says that a man by the name of Thomas Chalmers, a Scottish theologian of the early nineteenth century was the first to suggest a time gap between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. He also writes,

“Chalmers' whole theory was based on a supposed mistranslation of the word “was” in verse 2 [of Genesis 1] (p. 2).

There is no need for Hebrew or Greek to prove a point but by simple comparison of words and verses in the Authorized Version to get the cross-references that interpret themselves; No adding to the text; No subtracting to the text; and no taking the text out of context. And just because Chalmers didn't know what he was talking about doesn't give Tabb an alibi to throw out tens of verses of revelation to disprove the gap fact.

Hovind and company stepped over their bounds and got out of line to fight a battle with Chalmers' crowd of theistic-evolutionists while throwing out revelation to do it.

**Chapter 8**  
**More Gaps**  
**“And” (Genesis 1:2) and the Gap Fact**

In Genesis 1:2 we read, **“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”**

The first word in this verse is **“And...”** This word alone can be proven from scripture that it separates and not only joins one and the same event, but rather separates two different events with a GAP in between those two events.

For example, look how the word **“And”** separates Daniel 9:26 from verse 27 by a period of 2000 years –

**And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: (2,000 year gap...) and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.**

(2,000 year gap...) **AND he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.**

That is a gap FACT that cannot be denied!

Look also at Isaiah 61:1, 2 how the word **“and”** separates two different events.

**The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;**

**To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, (2,000 year gap...) and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn;**

Are you going to deny these verses? There they are, right under your nose, staring you in the face. How could you reject such obvious revelation of the usage of the word “and?”

Let’s look also at John 5:28-29 to show how the word “and” separates two different events by 2,000 years.

**Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,**

**And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; (1,000 year gap...) and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.**

So to categorically reject the possibility of there being a gap just by the very word “and” would be rushing to prove a point, jumping to conclusions and rejecting light from the scriptures.

## Rightly Dividing and More Biblical GAPS

Unfortunately, many of our brethren have missed the blessing of seeing the Biblical practice of the Holy Spirit creating GAPS between events. There is no such thing of a gap *theory* as Bro. Hovind, Bro. Tabb, Bro. Ham and others would have you to believe. It is rather a gap **FACT**. And to deny the following verses to prove such GAPS will only show your ignorance and blindness.

Now you wouldn't think that there would be so much in one verse such as Genesis 1:2 but that is the difference between "searching the scriptures" and simply saying that Genesis 1:2 was just part of the creation week till the end of the chapter. For it is a common practice of the Holy Spirit to explain a period or different periods with GAPS between them which cover thousands of years. Here are more examples.

### Example No. 1

For instance in Genesis 3:15 you will notice that in one verse there is enough prophecy within its content to write at least 10 pages and preach at least 10 sermons. **"And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, AND thou shalt bruise his heel."** To make it short this is the first direct prophecy of Jesus Christ (Matt. 1:23), but the prophecy of the seed of the serpent is seldom mentioned (8:44). **"...between thy seed..."** is speaking of Judas Iscariot (John 6:70; John 17:12) and also the Anti-Christ (2 Thess. 2:7, 8) which was yet another FOUR THOUSAND and SIX THOUSAND YEARS respectively to come. **"Her seed"** is of course Jesus Christ. (Matt. 1:23). **"it shall bruise they head..."** is dealing with the Second Advent which would not happen until another SIX THOUSAND YEARS, **"...AND thou shalt bruise his heel."** Is dealing with the cross of Christ.

This prophecy is foreseeing things at a distance of four thousand – GAP – to six thousand years ahead of time. Not only that the last half is not in chronological order. The Second Advent is spoken of before the Lords First Advent.

From this example of scripture the Holy Spirit has taken the liberty to do a number of things;

- 1.) Divide a verse by punctuation marks that cover thousands of years.
- 2.) Write a verse so that they are written not in chronological order.

So the Lord has His own order of placing things. The Holy Spirit can write things in one verse that can only be expounded by patient study of the scripture, making the proper division (GAP), comparisons and repetitions. Once that happens everything falls into its proper place.

### Example No. 2

An example of events written in reverse order is when Paul wrote to those in Thessalonica concerning both the two different parts of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent, **"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, (2<sup>nd</sup> part) – GAP – AND by our gathering together unto him"** (1<sup>st</sup> part, 2 Thess. 2:1).

Notice the word “and” in this verse. It is what DIVIDES, or creates a GAP between the two different events. That is not man’s explanation of a verse. That is the work of the Holy Spirit; plain and simple.

Example No. 3

Let’s take another verse. We read in Isaiah 9:1, 2, **“Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. – [GAP] –**

**The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.”**

This is a case where a period at the end of verse 1 separates two definite time periods, the Great Tribulation and the Millennium. Gap *“theory”* huh?!

Example No. 4

**“Binding his foal unto the vine, and his ass’s colt unto the choice vine; [GAP] he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes”** (Gen. 49:11).

Notice again how that the verse is SPLIT by a GAP and the difference between the two halves is 2000 years and those 2000 years are represented by a semi-colon after the word **“vine;”**

So to say that there is no such thing of a gap, (as many of our brethren do), is simply the figment of their own imaginations. They approach the Bible with doubt (Gen. 3:1-6) as to Biblical facts, and then construct their own subjective doctrine using the inductive method of their own theology. It is pure SUBJECTION! The result of that is evolution, the very thing they are accusing Bible believers of they themselves are GUILTY.

Now we have seen in both Testaments the regular practice of God to create a GAP in between two different events. We will look further into the Biblical doctrine of GAPS when we study “generations” in chapter 14.

### **“And”**

A closer look at all the words in the second verse in the entire Bible is rather an enlightening experience. The word **“and”** is used about 148 times in Genesis 1-2 to separate the 102 recorded independent acts of God. Verse 2 is as independent of verse 1 as to time and subject matter as all the other separate acts of God. **Verse 1 refers to the whole universe being created and inhabited with “the sons of God” (Job 38), while verse 2 refers to chaos because of sin. Verses 3-31 picture the restoration of the earth as before chaos, and its second habitation now with present man, (Adam as “the son of God” Luke 3:38) and the new earth brought into being about 6,000 years ago.**

So we agree with the “young earth” proponents of the Fundamental Creation Science crowd that the earth, that is *THIS* earth, is *about* six thousand years old, as Kent Hovind has taught. But we most certainly DISAGREE with them where they smoothly and very subtly overlook a gap in Genesis 1:2 that is FACT that we’ve already proven although we



haven't even come to the half mark of this book. And we have done that without having to refer to any dictionaries (as Hovind does) any Hebrew or Greek lexicons or any other source of information.

Dr. Peter S. Ruckman writes concerning the word “**and**,”

“Often miscalled “The Gap Theory.” What takes place in verse 2 is *historical* and takes place after 1:1. There’s no theory to it. The Institute for Creation Research has failed to observe that the word “**and**” occurs at the beginning of every verse in the chapter down to verse 31 (with the exception of vs. 27), and not one time in *thirty-one verses* does it refer to the verse *before* it. The silly teaching that verse 2 refers to verse 1 *violates the entire chapter of 31 verses.*”

(Ruckman Reference Bible p. 1)

### “was” means “became”

There is something else that needs to be mentioned about Jeremiah 4:23. Notice the two italicized words “*IT WAS*” in the verse. The word “**WAS**” is the very same word in Genesis 1:2 talking about the earth, that it “**WAS without form and void...**” meaning that it WASN'T “**without form and void**” *at one time, previous to that event*. Did you get that??? Let’s lay it out another way. If in Jeremiah we read “**I beheld the earth, and, lo, IT WAS without form, and void;**” it will have to BECOME “without form and void” because as of the year 2011 [at the time of this writing] the earth has NOT become of that state yet, but it WILL become “without form, and void” during the Great Tribulation. Now that is the *true* interpretation and the *only* interpretation of Genesis 1:2. The Book explains the Book. So ‘get with it’ or else the Book is going to “book” you.

Not only that, the words “*it was*” (Jer. 4:23) are in *italics* meaning they were not in the “original” Hebrew text. Don’t you know that the Lord had His mighty hand on those translators of the King James Bible 1611 for them to put “*it was*” in Jeremiah 4:23? They knew what they were doing.

Now if that weren’t enough, let’s take our concordance and look at what God has prepared for us. In Mark 14:1 we read –

**After two days was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.**

Notice the word “**WAS**” in the beginning phrase. In the context, the event of the Passover had not yet taken place. But it eventually took place. It came and gone. First it wasn’t, that is, it hadn’t taken place, and then it became, it came, it had taken place. The very same thing is what we’ve been talking about with the second verse of the Holy Bible, “**And the earth WAS without form...**” It wasn’t in that state but then it BECAME in such a state. Clear and simple, using scripture to interpret scripture and not your ‘logic’ to create a private interpretation to drag the holy scriptures down to your humanistic level. Humanism is contagious among those that profess to be Fundamentalists.

One of the basic “fundamentals of the faith” should be a proper comparing of the scriptures. All one has to do is simply trust the Lord to show you where He has interpreted Himself. The REPETITION is in Jeremiah 4:23. There are no other verses in the entire Bible with that very same phrase, “...was without form and void.” And THAT, i.e., Jeremiah 4:23, is enough for God to explain what He wanted to say in Genesis 1:2. If any body adds to that or takes away from that, then he has some ulterior motive for denying absolute TRUTH. He is trying to build a ministry upon a lie.

Now just to show you how unique the scriptures are, let’s take the concordance and type in the words “was” and “became” and see if we can find the scriptures interpreting the scriptures. Well, lo and behold you can find a number of places that use those two words interchangeably in the very same verse. They interpret one another.

“And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads” (Gen. 2:10).

“And the cloud departed from off the tabernacle; and, behold, Miriam became leprous, white as snow: and Aaron looked upon Miriam, and, behold, she was leprous.” (Num. 12:10).

“And when he came unto Lehi, the Philistines shouted against him: and the Spirit of the LORD came mightily upon him, and the cords that were upon his arms became as flax that was burnt with fire, and his bands loosed from off his hands” (Judg. 15:14).

“And the king answered and said unto the man of God, Intreat now the face of the LORD thy God, and pray for me, that my hand may be restored me again. And the man of God besought the LORD, and the king's hand was restored him again, and became as it was before” (1 Kings 13:6).

“Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.” (Rom. 1:21).

Now comparing scripture with scripture let’s take another look at the fierce anger of God as it will be in the Tribulation so it was in Genesis 1:2. We learn history by the future and the future by history. The BOOK is circular, eternal.

**“Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the LORD of hosts, and in the day of his FIERCE ANGER”** (Isa. 13:13).

God’s fierce anger speaks of JUDGMENT upon sin. Sin was in Genesis 1:2. God judged Lucifer who fell along with “the sons of God.” As a result of God’s judgment, the **earth was** [that is it became] **without form...**”

## “without form” and “form”

**“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness [was] upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”**

At this point in historical time (Genesis 1:2); with the ancient world in total ruin, the Lord God draws a clear distinction in the cosmos between spiritual AND physical light and darkness. At the very beginning of this regeneration work He sets an impassable and fixed boundary between His Holy throne on high and the corrupted physical realm of matter below.

**“And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which *were* under the firmament from the waters which *were* above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day”** (Genesis 1:6-8).

This firmament, the reconfiguration as structured here, contains three heavens; specifically, the Earth’s atmosphere as the first and outer space as the second. The Third Heaven is above it all, beyond the realm of the physical cosmos. In between the second and third heaven the Lord God now places a “Sea” which is a point of division. This Sea is above the cosmos but below the third heaven. These “waters above the firmament” are spoken of in the following references: Gen 1:6-10; Rev 4:6; Rev 21:1 and others.

This is a partition He established between Himself and His abode (Holy and pure) and the physical cosmos below (now purged from uncleanness, yet still bearing the buried scars of Death’s previous effects. That we will easily prove. Just be patient.

Again we read in Genesis 1:2 **“And the earth was without form...”** Now take your King James Bible and look at the next time the word **“form”** shows up. We must do this as commanded (John 5:39). The next mention of the word **“form”** has to do with the body of a man, Adam (Gen. 2:7). God created Adam’s body and it was right, perfect, and NOT without form. It was ready for God to breathe into it. It does not say in the Bible that God had to do anything else with the body after it was formed out of the dust of the ground to “give it shape,” or “make it right.” It was already all right!!!

In other words, when God created the heaven and the earth is was created perfectly, without flaw, error, or darkness (Gen. 1:1). As is it written, **“He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak”** (Mark 7:37). That was done after their FALLEN state.

When Jesus Christ healed the sick, opened the eyes of the blind, made the dumb to speak, He did it PERFECTLY. He did that after their FALLEN state. When Jesus Christ died on the cross He said, **“It is FINISHED.”** And bless your soul, dear brother, when you got saved, you were born-again PERFECTLY, after your FALLEN state.

**“He hath done all things well.”** When you were saved you were made a new CREATURE, not creation (2 Cor. 5:17) IMMEDIATELY! It was instant! There was no process involved. And when God made you a new creature He did something that cannot be taken away from nor can anything be added to it. PERIOD! Salvation of the soul is something that God does and He does it PERFECTLY and INSTANTLY. Only some deceived man would think that salvation of the soul is a process.

And when God created the heaven and the earth (Gen. 1:1) He did it PERFECTLY, despite your opinion, name or ministry. All the things that God created, the Bible says they were SPOKEN INTO EXISTENCE! But the earth, after it was created, then **“it was”** (remember it became, thanks to Jeremiah’s added revelation – without any Hebrew originals) **without form and void.**” In other words, it was RUINED; it was without form and void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep.

When God wants to deform something He can do it very easily, **“By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath FORMED the CROOKED serpent”** (Job 26:13). And the reason why God forms something “crooked” is because the serpent himself was crooked in his heart (Ezek. 28:15, Isa. 14:12). He made himself crooked, so God “crooked” him, just as God hardened Pharaoh’s heart (Exod. 7:13) [watch out for the 13’s] because Pharaoh hardened his own heart (Exod. 8:15, 32).

Here is some more revelation concerning the word **“form,”**

**“The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, saith the LORD, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and FORMETH the spirit of man within him”** (Zech. 12:1).

Notice that when God forms something He does it right. Would anybody be so foolish to say that when God gave man’s spirit that it was “without form and void”? Zechariah brings us right back to Genesis 2:7. Let’s look at it again, now in light of Zechariah 12:1,

- 1.) **“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, (a perfect job)**
- 2.) **“and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life;”** (that’s Zech. 12:1 **“... formeth the spirit of man within him.”** That was a perfect and instant job too.
- 3.) **“and man became a living soul.”** Perfect; no sin, death nor or darkness, etc.

So the Holy Bible has just “blown” their theory of anti-gapism “right out of the ‘WATER.’”

Now someone like Tabb comes along and says,

“Another verse used by gap theorists in connection to the phrase “without form, and void” is Isaiah 45:18. The reader will recall we previously discussed their quoting this verse from the RV instead of the KJV in order to be able to apply the word waste to Genesis 1:2.”

Another false accusation. Here is a case of false representation. Just because Tabb found a man that uses different versions to prove something that he represents all others that CAN prove the gap believing *only* in the King James Version. We have not used any other version to prove anything. We have taken the “First Mention” principle from the Holy Bible 1611 and we have followed those words throughout the King James Bible and searched the scriptures (John 5:39) as commanded. We’ve taken other verses that repeat the very same words in other portions of scripture as we are supposed to do (1 Cor. 2:13) and let God interpret his own words. Do you find fault with the FACT that the holy

scriptures speak about things that have “**form**” (2 Tim. 1:13), things that were “**formed**” (Isa. 45:18) and things that were “**without form...**” (Gen. 1:2). Well, bless God look at what Isaiah says,

**“For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that FORMED the earth and made it; he hath established it, HE CREATED IT NOT IN VAIN, he FORMED it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.”**

The things that were put on the earth, or in the earth or over the earth has absolutely nothing to do with the FORM of the earth. The non-gappers say that God started out with some kind of a “blob” and during the six-day creation “process” He FORMED the earth. When God formed the earth it already had form. It was already in shape. When a man is out of shape he has a bad form. When you read Genesis 1:2 the earth was already out of shape, “**without form.**”

The fact of the matter is the earth of Genesis 1:1 was already inhabited by pre-Adamic sons of God with thrones, dominions, principalities and powers (Job 38:4-7; Col. 1:16-17) and not with humans. That is also another point of misrepresentation by Tabb and others.

Tabb’s comment is just another satanic attempt to get you to “**hold the truth in unrighteousness**” and omit [Hello Eve!] the order of creation. First the spiritual beings were created, then the heaven and earth. The earth became without form and void after it was already populated, even before darkness showed up, even before a literal, six 24-hour days of creation of this world (starting in Genesis 1:3) even before Adam and Eve were formed.

We believe in a literal creation. We are creationists and not as the brethren falsely accuse us of as being “creation-evolutionists.” That is a whole ‘nother group of men that have nothing to do with literal Biblical facts of sound doctrine where scores of scriptures bear witness to each other and agree to the testimony of a GAP in Genesis 1:2, whether the modern creations or the creation-evolutionists believe that or not. But the modern creationist movement of Ham, Hovind, Morris, Tabb, etc., deny so much revelation as you will see that it’s just pitiful that they cannot see and don’t accept the light of revelation where they’ve short-circuited along the way.

### “void”

Now let’s go to the next word of importance in Genesis 1:2, “**void.**” It also has a negative connotation to it just as “**without form.**”

Again take your Bible and find in your concordance the word “**void.**”

Now to get the added revelation which opens up Genesis 1:2 turn to the next time the word “**void**” is written by the Holy Spirit of God. It is in Numbers 30:12 **But if her husband hath utterly MADE THEM VOID on the day he heard them; then whatsoever proceeded out of her lips concerning her vows, or concerning the bond of her soul, shall not stand: her husband hath made them void; and the LORD shall forgive her.**

Look how the phrase “**made them void**” is mentioned in verse 12, 13 and 15. The meaning is simple. You don’t even have to explain it to understand it. In the context (vvs. 10, 11) the vow or a bond of a wife stands (v. 11) until her husband MAKES it void.

Adam “blew it” here. He “gave in” and allowed Eve’s words to stand. Satan tempted Eve to get her to fall to get to the head of the home, Adam.

We can apply what was mentioned under our first point to this second point, that is, that the earth BECAME void because again, Jeremiah mentions that the earth, “**it was without form, and void...**” Here in Numbers 30:12, what the woman says stands until the husband makes it void. That is, it BECOMES void by the husband. He is to practice what God Himself did. He made the earth “**without form and void...**” because of the words and intentions of the “**cherub that coverth.**” (Isa. 14:12, 13; Ezek. 28:15). Satan sinned and God judged the heavens and the earth, He made them void. The man is to make void anything that is said or intended by the wife that is against the word of God. Job did that when his wife told him to “curse God and die” (Job 2:9) He said, “**Thou speakest as one of the foolish women speaketh. What? Shall we receive good at the hand of God, and shall we not receive evil? In all this did not Job sin with his lips**” (v. 10). He made her words void.

That was very easy to figure out!!! The earth BECAME void, according the Authorized Version of the King James Bible; no Greek, no Hebrew languages no commentaries, no ministries were necessary for the interpretation. The words of God are self-interpreting and the written revelation of God Almighty is that her words are MADE void whereas they were NOT void at one time until they are MADE void, that is, they BECOME void. “**O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!**” (Romans 11:33).

The next time the word “void” is mentioned is in Deuteronomy 32:28 “**For they are a nation void of counsel, neither is there any understanding in them.**”

Note the reason why Israel BECAME a nation void of counsel was because of SIN. Psalm 89:39 **Thou hast made void the covenant of thy servant: thou hast profaned his crown by casting it to the ground.**

The reason that they made void the covenant was because of SIN. The word “**VOID**” according to the Holy Bible is a NEGATIVE word.” And for Kent Hovind, Mr. Tabb, Henry Morris and others simply don’t know what they are talking about when dealing with the creation God, that the earth just “happened to be without form and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep.”

Let’s continue to allow God to speak for Himself concerning the word “VOID” shall we? Or are you going to continue to be a blind, willfully ignorant Laodicean Christian and reject absolute light, PROGRESSIVE revelation and truth of the words of God?

Psalm 119:126 **It is time for thee, LORD, to work: FOR THEY HAVE MADE VOID thy law.** The reason they have made void the law is because of SIN. The law was not made void at one time but it BECAME void. They made it void.

Proverbs 7:7 **And beheld among the simple ones, I discerned among the youths, a young man void of understanding,** The reason why the simple ones are void of understanding is because of SIN.

Are you beginning to notice something here? SIN is the reason why there was a “void.” Look at Proverbs 10:13 and see who gets punished with a rod, “**him that is void of understanding.**”

Isaiah 55:11 **So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.**

**“And I will MAKE VOID the counsel of Judah and Jerusalem in this place; and I will cause them to FALL by the sword before their enemies, and by the hands of them that seek their lives: and their carcasses will I give to be meat for the fowls of the heaven, and for the beasts of the earth” (Jer. 19:7)**

Notice how the words “**void**” and “**fall**” are coupled together in this verse. They are both NEGATIVE words. So it only confirms the facts that when the earth “**was without form and void**” is was when Satan fell and God judged him and spoiled what he rightfully had rule over.

Notice carefully the revelation given by Nahum -  
**“She is empty, (NEGATIVE) and VOID, (NEGATIVE) and waste: (NEGATIVE) and the heart melteth, (NEGATIVE) and the knees smite together, (NEGATIVE) and much pain is in all loins, (NEGATIVE) and the faces of them all gather blackness” (NEGATIVE) (Nahum 2:10).**

There is no possible way to say that when God created the heaven and the earth that He didn’t do it right. He did it right, without error and without void. But the earth BECAME “**without form and VOID**” in Genesis 1:2 according to Jeremiah 4:23. **“But the heavens and the earth which are now”** (2 Pet. 3:7) will become without form and VOID in the Tribulation (according to Jeremiah’s prophecy) after the Church is raptured (1 Thess. 4:16-18) which is a foretaste of a total dissolving of the heavens and the earth at the end of the Millennium (2 Pet. 3:7b, 10-13).

Notice again that for us to come to the Biblical interpretation of the scriptures we simply took a concordance and ran references on the word “**void.**” We allowed God to speak up for Himself. He is very capable of doing that. When it comes to interpreting the scriptures the Christian should be exercised in allowing the scriptures to speak for themselves in other portions of scriptures rather than “butting in” and speaking before hearing a matter **“He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him”** (Proverbs 18:13).

Now we will not belabor our point but we cannot leave this matter of what the Lord makes without discussing Isaiah 24:1, **“Behold, the LORD MAKETH THE EARTH EMPTY, and MAKETH IT WASTE, and turneth it upside down, and scattereth abroad the inhabitants thereof.”**

Notice in this verse that it is the Lord that **“maketh the earth empty... and waste.”** Now a more important question to ask would be *WHY* would God do that? It certainly is not because in His creation He started out with a blob of clay and then began to form a nice vase as was previously mentioned. In the context all becomes very clear; it is because of SIN, and God’s JUDGEMENT upon sin that God **“maketh the earth empty, and maketh it waste...”** Verses 2-12 speak of **“usury”** (v. 2) **“the land shall be utterly EMPTIED”** (v. 3), **“the haughty people...”** (v. 4), **“The earth also is defiled under**

**the inhabitants thereof; BECAUSE THEY HAVE TRANSGRESSED THE LAWS, CHANGED THE ORDINANCE, BROKEN THE EVERLASTING COVENANT”** (v. 5), **“CONFUSION...”** (v. 10), **“ALL JOY IS DARKENED”** (v. 11).

To overlook the revelation of God here and the similarities between this passage and Jeremiah 4:23 concerning the reason WHY the earth **“that then was”** (2 Pet. 3:6) **“was without form and void”** (Gen. 1:2) and the **“heavens and the earth which are now** (2 Pet. 3:7) will be in such an awful condition (Jer. 4:23) is to pass by monumental proportions of revelation of the scriptures. And that is exactly the case with many of our ‘creationist’ brethren. When you stumble over one verse to prove a point (Rom. 5:12) all other relating subjects and verses will become perverted to justify the first point.

### **“darkness”**

Now we come to a word that also has a negative connotation to it, the word, **“darkness.”** In Genesis 1:2 the word **“darkness”** is mentioned for the first time. In theology, concerning Biblical interpretation there is what is called, ‘the Principle of First Mention.’ That means that once that word is mentioned it will basically give you what kind of connotation it will have throughout the rest of the Bible.

The second time **“darkness”** is mentioned is immediately in verse 4, **“And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness.”** He saw that the light, **“that it was good,”** but not the darkness. He **“divided the light FROM the darkness.”**

Verse four shows that darkness is not good because God did not call the darkness good as He did the light. On the second day when God created the firmament to divide the waters so that there would be waters above the firmament and waters below the firmament, He does not say that it was good as He said on all the other days of creation. A rather ominous omission, wouldn’t you say? Why is that? That is where principalities, powers, the rulers of the **darkness** of this world, spiritual wickedness in high places are (Eph. 6:12).

The Bible says that we are to **“rightly [divide] the word of truth”** (2 Tim. 2:15). Right in the context of Genesis 1:2 there is a DIVISION. If you don’t make that division you are disobeying God in matters of Bible interpretation.

For some of the brethren who have taken the position that there was no gap between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2, Dr. M.H. Tabb says,

“Exodus 20:21 says God Himself was in thick darkness on Mount Sinai. Is that to say that God was in a state of evil?”

He asked the question without searching the scriptures to answer that question. We will answer Mr. Tabb’s question for him.

Mr. Tabb overlooks the fact that the “thick darkness” is also mentioned in other parts of the Bible. That is what we should do to get a Biblical answer; search in other parts of the Bible the very same words where the Holy Spirit writes those words according to 1 Corinthians 2:13 to let God explain His own words, instead of asking a question and



leaving the reader without the answer as SATAN DID to Eve, **“Yeah hath God said? ...”** Then the Devil straight forth LIED to her (Gen. 3:1-6).

### First Mention Principle of **“thick darkness”**

In your Bible, the first time **“thick darkness”** is mentioned is in Exodus 10:22. It gives you the general idea what it is about – judgment. To think that “darkness” is a part of creation in Genesis 1:2 and not judgment is to slide over a negative truth. Here is your first revelation in Holy writ about **“thick darknes,”** – **“And Moses stretched forth his hand toward heaven; and there was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days:”**

Now what do you make of that? I’ll tell you what you do with it, just BELIEVE IT! The judgment here is simply a foretaste of the “outer darkness” of 2 Peter 2:17 and it is one of the judgments which is destined to fall on the earth during the Great Tribulation (Rev. 16:10) because the book of Exodus will be repeated, **“And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain.”**

That sure doesn’t sound like ‘creation’ to me does it dear Kent?

For more absolute revelation concerning **“thick darkness”** (which many of your “Funny-mentalists” missed) let’s go to Exodus 19:14-18. Read the verses CAREFULLY and notice –

1. **“Moses went down from the mount...”** (v. 14).
2. **“...there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount...”** (v. 16).
3. **“And MOUNT SINAI WAS ALTOGETHER ON A SMOKE, because the LORD descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly”** (v. 18).

Verse 18 is what really knocks Tabb “out of the race.” Mount Sinai was **“altogether on a SMOKE...”** Why was that Mr. Tabb? Well, we will tell you why. Because **“...the LORD descended upon it in a FIRE...”** If that weren’t enough revelation for some of our blind brethren, Moses continues to write under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit the following words, **“and the SMOKE thereof ascended as the smoke of a FURNACE...”**

You see, darkness is not only a part of God’s creation AS A RESULT OF JUDGMENT AND SIN but also as a result of either fire or water and clouds. Here in Exodus 19, God was letting the nation Israel know that **“God is a consuming FIRE”** (Deut. 4:24; 6:25; 9:3; Heb. 12:29). The Jews were SCARED OF DYING (JUDGMENT) at that mount. Look at Exodus 20:18-21 –

1. **“But let not God speak with us, lest we die”** (v. 21).
2. **“And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and when the people saw *it*, they removed, and stood afar off”** (v. 18).

3. **“And the people stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the THICK DARKNESS where God *was*”** (v. 21).

Tabb’s argument is this - “Exodus 20:21 says God Himself was in thick darkness on Mount Sinai. Is that to say that God was in a state of evil?” We will answer that question for Mr. Tabb. Absolutely NOT! It was a RESULT of God’s JUDGMENT. For Mr. Tabb not to explain to you WHY the **“thick darkness”** is present is to HIDE ABSOLUTE REVELATION FROM YOUR EYES. That is what the Lord accused the lawyers of in His day **“Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered”** (Luke 11:52).

Now let’s look at Deuteronomy 5:22, 23. This verse ought to settle this issue once and for all. Notice that the darkness is because of the fire that burned – **“And it came to pass, when ye heard the voice out of the midst of the darkness, (FOR THE MOUNTAIN DID BURN WITH FIRE,) that ye came near unto me, *even* all the heads of your tribes, and your elders”** (v. 23).

#### **“darkness” as a shield or cover**

In Exodus and Deuteronomy and as in other places the darkness served also as a *COVER* (Job 22:13, 14) for human eyes so that that people would not perish upon seeing that **“light which no man can approach unto”** (1 Tim. 6:16).

One must understand that there is no man that can stare at the sun on a bright day. Now how in the world would you think that man could look at God, Who is absolute **“Light”** in His essence? **“God is light, and in him is no darkness at all”** (1 Jn. 1:5). There is no possible way! Therefore God put a BARRIER between him and fallen man as a result of *SIN* on man’s part.

The word, **“thick darkness”** is also mentioned in 1 Kings 8:12. It has to do with merely a cover for man eyes so that they will not perish upon seeing God. 1 Kings 8:12 says, **“Then spake Solomon, The LORD said that he would dwell in the thick darkness.”** This verse is also repeated in 2 Chronicles 6:1.

One of our members thought he was smart enough to try to convince another member that darkness was not bad. So he showed him 2 Chronicles 6:1. Just as soon as I walked up to them with my Bible in my hand that man walked away. So I went home and looked at the context of 2 Chronicles 6:1. Look at the previous verse in 5:14. It deals with “the cloud.” **“...the priests could not stand to minister by reason of the CLOUD: for the GLORY of the LORD had filled the house of God.”**

That is exactly what it says in 1 Kings 8:12. That is what Psalm 18:11 (KJV) is talking about. Tabb himself quotes, or should I say, *MISQUOTES* Psalm 18:11, **“He made darkness his secret place...”**

Notice that Bro. Tabb did not quote the rest of the verse, which says, **“his pavilion round about him were DARK WATERS AND THICK CLOUDS OF THE SKIES.”**

Notice that Tabb cuts off part of the verse to prove his heresy.

Phenomenon! Satan is a master at training even Christians to TAKE AWAY words from God. Tabb did not finish the verse. “**Thou shalt not steal...**” (Rom. 13:9).

Here we will list verses that deal with “**thick darkness**” –

And he made darkness pavilions round about him, dark waters, *and* **thick clouds** of the skies. (2 Sam. 22:12)

And thou sayest, How doth God know? can he judge through the **DARK CLOUD**? **Thick clouds** *are* a covering to him, that he seeth not; and he walketh in the circuit of heaven. (Job 22:13, 14)

Job 26:8 He bindeth up the waters in his **thick clouds**; and **THE CLOUD** is not rent under them.

He made darkness his secret place; his pavilion round about him *were* **dark waters** *and* **thick clouds** of the skies.

At the brightness *that was* before him his **thick clouds** passed, hail *stones* and coals of fire. (Psalm 18:11,12)

John Gill (1697-1771) (English pastor and theologian before Charles Haddon Spurgeon was pastor) says this about the verse,

Which, and the dark waters in the next clause, [the clause that Tabb did not quote] are the same with the thick clouds in the last, in which Jehovah is represented as wrapping himself, and in which he lies hid as in a secret place; not so as that he cannot see others, as wicked men imagine, Job 22:13, 14; but as that he cannot be beheld by others;”

That is the proper interpretation of the text for he mentions Job 22:13, 14 which reads, “**And thou sayest, How doth God know? Can he judge through the dark cloud?**

**Thick clouds ARE A COVERING to him, that he seeth not; and he walketh in the circuit of heaven.”**

Tabb also quotes Isaiah 45:7 to justify his heresy that there was no sin and fall and judgment of God with a flood in Genesis 1:2, “**I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things.**”

Mr. Tabb misinterpreted the passage thinking that when Isaiah wrote that God creates darkness that it wasn’t bad. Well look at what Amos said about God and evil, “**Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? Shall there be EVIL in a city, and the LORD hath not done it?”**

Now there is the Biblical explanation of darkness and evil. God doesn’t say that darkness is good any more than He said evil is good for the last half of Amos 3:6 says, “**shall there be evil in a city, and the LORD hath not done?**” meaning the Lord allowed and created the evil to pass because of SIN on the part of Israel.

Not only that, Isaiah 45:7 says that “[God CREATED] **darkness**” not God IS darkness or that darkness was a part of God’s creation as Hovind thinks, **“This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all (1Jn.1:5).** When you accept His revelation you get light from Him; when you reject His revelation the result is God’s judgment- DARKNESS!

God is not darkness although He has the power to create it AS A RESULT AND JUDGMENT UPON SIN for God is light, absolute light and any sin brings upon it the judgment of God and darkness as a result of SIN.

For another explanation of the darkness in Genesis 1:2 we quote Dr. David E. Walker,

“The **“thick darkness”** that is associated with God (Exod. 20:21; Deut. 4:11; 1 Kings 8:12; 2 Chron. 6:1; Psa. 18:8-11; and Psa. 97:2) is not there because it is “good,” but rather to divide between Himself and His sinful creation. To claim that the darkness is good because God created it ignores the purpose and intent behind its inception.”

(The Bible Believer’s Guide to Dispensationalism, p. 228)

Absolutely correct! This is also explained by the fact that God divided the darkness from the light in Genesis 1:4. Not only that, the Lord shows the difference between **“day”** and **“night”** (Gen. 1:18) in our solar system as a means through creation to show Who He is. The eternal Godhead is manifest through His creation. **“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear”** (Heb. 11:3).

**“For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they (even Fundamentalists) are without excuse”** (Rom. 1:20).

On Mount Sinai, Moses (Ex 20:21) **“drew near unto the thick darkness where God was.”** This was the **“thick cloud upon the mount”** in which Jehovah was when he spake unto Moses there. The Lord dwelt in the cloud upon the mercy-seat (1 Kings 8:12) the cloud of glory. When the psalmist (Psa. 97:2) describes the inscrutable nature of God’s workings among the sons of men, he says, **“Clouds and darkness are round about him.”** God dwells in thick darkness. Darkness (Isa. 13:9, 10; Matt. 24:29) also is a symbol of the judgments that attend on the coming of the Lord.

We learn the past by added revelation; we can know the future by studying the past. Under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit Solomon wrote added revelation concerning the evil man, the Anti-Christ,

**“When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul;**

**Discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee:**

**To deliver thee from the way of THE EVIL MAN, from the man that speaketh froward things;**

**Who leave the paths of uprightness, to WALK IN THE WAYS OF DARKNESS;**

**Who rejoice to do EVIL, and delight in the frowardness OF THE WICKED;  
Whose ways are CROOKED, and they froward in their paths” (Prov. 2:11-15).**

Now there are some very important words here that are absolutely necessary to make note of-

- 1.) Note the singular **“of the evil man.”** This is prophecy of the Anti-Christ.
- 2.) Note the singular word **“man”** in italics added by the King James translators, which is added revelation.
- 3.) Note **“DARKNESS”** in verse 13.
- 4.) Notice that **“EVIL”** follows in the next verse.
- 5.) Notice that **“THE WICKED”** is in verse 14. The wicked are connected with **“THAT WICKED”** of 2 Thessalonians 2:7.
- 6.) Finally, notice that his way is **“CROOKED.”** They take after Leviathan (Isa. 27:1).

All of this context is directly connected with the **“darkness”** of Genesis 1:2. The Book is eternal, with added revelation to help you understand the past.

Unfortunately our dear brethren, have spent so much time and paper, cassettes, DVD's, CD's, etc., to prove their point about creation and the young earth, couldn't figure out Romans 5:12. And because of that, they couldn't figure out Genesis 1:2-5, where the words **“light”** and **“darkness”** occur –

**“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.**

**And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.**

**And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness.**

**And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day” (Gen. 1:2-5).**

The Book that takes you back before Genesis 1:1 is the Gospel of John. Its beginning is similar to that of Genesis 1:1-5,

**“In him was life; and the life was the light of men.**

**And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not” (John 1:4, 5).**

Jesus Christ is the light and light is connected with life. Where there is no light, there is no life. Where there is no light there is darkness. Darkness can't figure light out.

We note Dr. Peter S. Ruckman concerning John 1:5,

**“You now have coupled “LIGHT” with “LIFE” and thus have retreated way back to Psalm 36:9: “For with thee is the fountain of life” in thy light shall we see light.”**

You cannot “see THE light” unless you have some light from GOD so you can see it. It is the “word” that gives you the “light” to see **“the light.”**

**“Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path”** (Psa. 119:105).

Note the original “match meet” (“**And God said, Let there be light: and there was light,**” Gen. 1:3) and notice that Paul’s “**rulers of the darkness of this world**” are in “**high places**” (Eph. 6:12). In Isaiah 24:21 the AV of 1611 gives advanced “light” on these “**high places**” which no Hebrew scholar or Greek scholar could find in either Testament in the last 1,900 years; this darkness in “**high places**” is found ABOVE the stratosphere (Isa. 24:21). That is why the expression “**and God saw that it was good**” is not to be found in Genesis 1:7 although every other day of creation is followed by that expression. There are “**principalities and powers**” in “**heavenly places**” far above any king, potentate, dictator, ruler, senator, prince, noble, chairman, Pope, or “secretary general” on this planet.”

(The Bible Believer’s Commentary Series p. 10).

In scripture, all instances of obscuring the absolute light of God (Gen. 1:2) or the light of the sun which brought consequent darkness, and the two past cases of floods (Gen. 1:2; 6-8) are revealed to be the result of judgment, not creation.

Just stop and think for a moment. Here is the God of all creation in all His glory so bright, eternal and wonderful; that NO MATTER WHAT HE DOES, He does it PERFECTILY, RIGHTEOUSLY [for “**there is no unrighteousness in Him**” (Psa.92:14)] GLORIOUSLY, for in Him is NO DARKNESS. “**God is light, and in him is no darkness at all** (1Jn.1:5); for His absolute light is unapproachable – “**LIGHT WHICH NO MAN CAN APPROACH UNTO**” (1 Tim. 6:16), WHO DOES NO SIN, for “**IN HIM IS NO SIN**” (1 Jn.3:5) AND CANNOT SIN, WHO HATES SIN, WHO DOING “**ALL THINGS WELL**” (Mk. 7:37) created the heaven and the earth (Gen. 1:1) PERFECTLY, and then for some strange reason (as the young earth ‘creationists’ think), up pops this earth that “**WAS WITHOUT FORM, AND VOID; AND DARKNESS WAS UPON THE FACE OF THE DEEP.**”

Let’s take it a step further. Don’t leave me now! When God creates a new heavens and a new earth (Isa. 65:17) where there will be an earth that *won’t* be without form, and *won’t* be void, and there *won’t* be any darkness. Do you mean to tell me or any other person that has got any sense that the first time God created the heaven and the earth that he did it ‘the wrong way’??? OR THE EARTH JUST ‘HAPPENED’ TO BE “**WITHOUT FORM AND VOID AND DARKNESS WAS UPON THE FACE OF THE DEEP**” but the second time God creates the heavens and the earth they WON’T be without form and void and there won’t be any darkness? You mean God didn’t ‘do it right’ the first time but He’s s going to do it a little bit different the next time. Right? Nothing like bringing God down to YOUR OWN LEVEL of thinking. That type of thinking resembles the thinking of an evolutionist. An evolutionist starts with ‘something’ that improves over a period of time. That is how it sounds with the anti-gap theorists. God started with something empty, void and dark and moved its way up by God creating it into something nice and full. THAT sounds like evolution!

Darkness and God’s Judgment on Sin and the Cross

Let's take a look at another verse about "**darkness**" in the Bible. Jesus Christ was crucified on the cross. Do you know what happened while he died and yet still on Cross? There was darkness, "**Now from the sixth hour there was DARKNESS over all the land unto the ninth hour.**" (Mt.27:45). That was God's hour of judging SIN. And for that it became darkness. Interesting how darkness has to do with SIN and God's judgment! That is still additional revelation to the first mention principle of the word "darkness" in Genesis 1:2.

What modern Laodicean Christians think is that the "**darkness**" in Genesis 1:2 is good or at least neutral, or at least not from evil. Then Isaiah has something to say to that, "**Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**" (Isa. 5:20). If darkness was alright in Genesis 1:2 then there would be no reason for Him to divide the light from the darkness.

### **"Darkness" and "Evil"**

For many of the Fundamentalists and Creationists such as Kent Hovind they believe that darkness has no connection with evil in Genesis 1:2. The problem with that is that even before Adam fell in Genesis 3:6 "**evil**" is already present "**And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil...**" (Gen 2:9).

Since evil is already present before Adam's fall then we must find somewhere else in the Bible the connection between darkness and evil. Let God speak for Himself –

Job 30:26 **When I looked for good, then EVIL came unto me: and when I waited for light, there came DARKNESS.** Notice how the Holy Bible explains that evil is connected with darkness. There is no need for any commentaries, lexicons, ministries or other explanations for the plain, simple, naked cutting truth.

Isaiah 5:20 **Woe unto them that call EVIL good, and good EVIL; that put DARKNESS for light, and light for DARKNESS; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**

Satan offered to Eve something which was "**good for food,**" (Gen. 3:6) but was in fact EVIL. Evil comes from the DEVIL. The devil loves company. Sin loves company!

Jeremiah 23:12 **Wherefore their way shall be unto them as slippery ways in the DARKNESS: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring EVIL upon them, even the year of their visitation, saith the LORD.**

Luke 11:34 **The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when thine eye is EVIL, thy body also is full of DARKNESS.**

John 3:19 **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved DARKNESS rather than light, BECAUSE THEIR DEEDS WERE EVIL.**

This last verse shows concretely that the devil's deeds were evil for there to be DARKNESS.

Note one more time the combination of "darkness" with "evil."  
**"I form the light, and create DARKNESS: I make peace, and create EVIL: I the LORD do all these things"** (Isaiah 45:7).

### **"Death" and "Darkness"**

Now for our Fundamentalist friends that would think that death is not the reason for darkness, let the Holy Scriptures, not your interpretation, speak for themselves.

**"Let DARKNESS and the shadow of DEATH stain it; let a cloud dwell upon it; let the blackness of the day terrify it"** (Job 3:5).

"Before I go *whence* I shall not return, *even* to the land of DARKNESS and the shadow of DEATH;  
A land of DARKNESS, as DARKNESS *itself*; and of the shadow of DEATH, without any order, and *where* the light *is* as DARKNESS." (Job 10:21, 22)

**"He discovereth deep things out of DARKNESS, and bringeth out to light the shadow of DEATH"** (Job 12:22).

**"There is no DARKNESS, nor shadow of DEATH, where the WORKERS OF INIQUITY may hide themselves"** (Job 34:22).

Notice that darkness and the shadow of death is connected with the "workers of iniquity" – **"For the mystery of iniquity doth already work..."** (2 Thess. 2:7).

Jeremiah 13:16 **Give glory to the LORD your God, before he cause DARKNESS, and before your feet stumble upon the dark mountains, and, while ye look for light, he turn it into the shadow of DEATH, and make it gross DARKNESS.**

It is God that causes darkness judging sin. It is God that knows the intentions of men's, and Lucifer's heart and turned it into gross darkness **"but when thine eye is EVIL, thy body also is full of DARKNESS"** (Luke 11:34).

For Kent Hovind to think that there was no death before Adam is simply showing his own blindness to such an obvious Biblical truth.

### **"Darkness" and "Judgment"**

Now having shown from the Bible, (not from commentaries, booklets, lexicons, Hebrew or Greek languages or Webster's Dictionary) that darkness is connected with evil, we will further show that darkness has to do with the judgment of God on sin.



**“For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of DARKNESS, to be reserved unto JUDGMENT” (2 Pet. 2:4).**

**“And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under DARKNESS unto the JUDGMENT of the great day” (Jude 1:6).**

These two verses are revelation as to what happened to the angels that sinned during Noah’s flood. But it is also added revelation to show also that God judged the sons of God that fell with Lucifer in Genesis 1:2. Those that fell in Genesis 1:2 were confined to the second heaven. They could no longer get back into the third heaven. They were judged and lost their intended habitation. Not only that they will be judged at the Great White Throne Judgment. Every born-again Christian that ever lived during the Church Age will judge angels.

The question has been asked, “Then what was the purpose of a flood if Lucifer and the sons of God sinned? Why would God judge His creation?”

Well, the answer to that is quite simple. God flooded the earth because of sin during Noah’s time and started all over with just eight souls. So therefore God flooded the heavens and the earth to start all over again with a re-creation (Gen. 1, 2). Our brethren twisted the purpose of “darkness” and made it a part of creation (positive) when in fact all of our verses that are linked with Genesis 1:2 have to do with God’s JUDGMENT (negative, 2 Tim. 2:15) upon that which He created.

The past is also mentioned in the future and the future teaches us of the past. Because of sin God intends to start all over again with a new heavens and a new earth (Rev. 21, 22). What was so hard about that?

If that weren’t enough, how could our brethren miss all the references where “darkness” and “judgment” are mentioned right in the very same verses?

Look at Psalm 97:1-4 –

**1 The LORD reigneth; let the earth rejoice; let the multitude of isles be glad *thereof*.  
2 Clouds and DARKNESS are round about him: righteousness and JUDGMENT are the habitation of his throne.**

**3 A fire goeth before him, and burneth up his enemies round about.**

**4 His lightnings enlightened the world: the earth saw, and trembled.**

This is such a clear passage that only the untrained eye and a spiritually unexercised person could miss what is written here. Notice that the context is dealing with the Second Advent of the Lord Jesus Christ and His reign on the earth (v. 1). Verse two speaks of the “**clouds**,” “**darkness**” and “**JUDGMENT**” (v. 2) connected with “**fire**” that burns up his enemies (v. 3), with **JUDGMENT** right in the very context.

“**Clouds**” (v. 2) and “**fire**” (v. 3) create “**darkness**” and the “**darkness**” is connected with “**JUDGMENT**” Very simple!

Let’s go to yet another passage – 2 Samuel 2:8-12

8 Then the earth shook and trembled; the foundations of heaven moved and shook, because he was WROTH.

9 There went up a smoke out of his nostrils, and fire out of his mouth devoured: coals were kindled by it.

10 He bowed the heavens also, and came down; and DARKNESS *was* under his feet.

11 And he rode upon a cherub, and did fly: and he was seen upon the wings of the wind.

12 And he made DARKNESS pavilions round about him, DARK WATERS, and THICK CLOUDS of the skies.

If you were to read further (vss. 13-17) you would see that the whole passage is dealing with the JUDGMENT of God and NOT with *creation*. It's quite obvious!

Notice that all of these passages have absolutely nothing to do with *creation*, as Mr. Kent Hovind would have you to think that is what happened in Genesis 1:2. Absolutely NOT! Darkness has everything to do with JUDGMENT in Genesis 1:2 and all the verses that we've discussed. They all link together. They are all tied into a great networking of revelation concerning God and Who He is concerning His character and His attitude of JUDGING SIN and the RESULT of that judgment.

The Book is TREMENDOUS!

In Joel 2:2-3 we read –

2 A day of DARKNESS and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of THICK DARKNESS, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there hath not been ever the like, neither shall be any more after it, *even* to the years of many generations.

3 A fire devoureth before them; and behind them a flame burneth: the land *is* as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yea, and nothing shall escape them.

Notice again that the DARKNESS is connected with “**clouds**” and “**THICK DARKNESS**” (v. 1) and “**fire**” that creates a cloud of smoke.

To think that darkness is connected with *creation* in Genesis 1:2 as Hovind, Ham, Tabb, Morris and company think is to say that black is white, green is red, and 1+1= 3. These men are wrong at this point.

### “Darkness,” “Death” and “the Workers of Iniquity”

We previously saw that darkness was connected with death and the workers of iniquity, “**There is no DARKNESS, nor shadow of DEATH, where the WORKERS OF INIQUITY may hide themselves**” (Job 34:22).

We mentioned that darkness and the shadow of death are connected with the “workers of iniquity” We also mentioned how that the “workers of iniquity” are connected with **“the mystery of iniquity doth already work...”** (2 Thess. 2:7).

Now let’s allow God Himself to tell us some things about the “workers of iniquity” We will take them as the Holy Spirit has them listed in the Holy Bible. And don’t forget that all of the following verses are connected with DARKNESS. We are taking a slight turn to study the phrase “workers of iniquity” but it is a branch off the main theme but still connected as the “missing link” of DARKNESS. We are still getting light concerning the first mention principle of the word **DARKNESS** in Genesis 1:2. Here we go!

**“Is not destruction to the wicked? And a strange punishment to the workers of iniquity?”** (Job 31:3).

**“Which goeth in company with the workers of iniquity, and walketh with wicked men”** (Job 34:8).

Notice that the **“workers of iniquity”** are connected to **“the wicked.”** Well, the wicked are connected to **“THAT WICKED,”** **“And then shall THAT WICKED be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming”** (2 Thess. 2:8).

Let’s not forget that we started with **DARKNESS**. Let’s say that is the root of our searching of the scriptures. It is like the trunk of a tree that is now showing us the many branches. Same root or roots, same trunk, and the branches of the same tree. Bad stuff! The fact of the matter is that our searching of the scriptures concerning DARKNESS is negative. That’s what this world and big “ministry men” can’t stand; a straight, hard, **NEGATIVE** shot all the way through from Genesis 1:2 to Revelation 16:10 which is the last time “darkness” is mentioned in the Bible.

The fact of the matter is once you get to the root of a matter and you find out from God Almighty that it is a bad root, you are to do with the tree as the Lord Jesus Christ said to do with it, **And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire”** (Matt. 3:10).

The fruitless tree that the “Creation Science” buffs have planted needs the axe laid unto to root, hewn down and thrown into the fire. After all that is where Satan ends up and he knows it after the Lord “laid into him” and “let him have it” in Genesis 1:2. To say that Genesis 1:2 is “just part of God’s creation” is a dishonor to God, “thanks” to the brethren.

Now let’s get back to one of the branches **“workers of iniquity”** of the root **“darkness.”**

**“The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all WORKERS OF INIQUITY”** (Psalm 5:5).

**“Depart from me, all ye WORKERS OF INIQUITY; for the LORD hath heard the voice of my weeping”** (Psalm 6:8).

**“Have all the WORKERS OF INIQUITY no knowledge? Who eat up my people as they eat bread, and call not upon the LORD” (Psa. 14:4).**

**“Draw me not away with the wicked, and with the WORKERS OF INIQUITY, which speak peace to their neighbours, but mischief is in their hearts” (Psa. 28:3).**

**“There are the WORKERS OF INIQUITY FALLEN: they are CAST DOWN, and shall not be able to rise” (Psa. 36:12).**

### **“Workers of iniquity” and “crooked”**

This 3-worded phrase **“workers of iniquity,”** is mentioned 21 times in the entire Bible. They all have some added revelation with opens up absolute truth as to what characterizes Satan and what had happened in Genesis 1:2.

Here is another added revelation concerning things that are “crooked,” **“As for such as turn aside unto their CROOKED ways, the LORD shall lead them forth WITH THE WORKERS OF INIQUITY: but peace shall be upon Israel” (Psalm 125:5).**

Look how the Lord leads and shows another “missing link” concerning the **“workers of iniquity”** that there are those who **“turn aside unto their CROOKED ways.”** There ways are crooked because their father is crooked,

**“By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath FORMED THE CROOKED SERPENT” (Job 26:13).**

**“In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, EVEN LEVIATHAN THAT CROOKED SERPENT; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea” (Isaiah 27:1).**

So now we’ve come a long way by a very simple method of “comparing scripture with scripture” (1 Cor. 2:14) to get the plain explanation of the scriptures by the scriptures themselves. We started out with “DARKNESS” as a “root” and went to the “trunk” of “darkness and evil,” and then we ‘branched out’ to the many branches of “darkness and death,” “darkness, death and the workers of iniquity” “the wicked,” “THAT WICKED,” “CROOKED ways,” “crooked serpent, “piercing serpent, etc. And we’re far from being done. It goes on and on. We could have done the same thing with the word **“And”** in Genesis 1:2. We could have done the same thing with the words **“the earth was without form.”** We could have done the same thing with the word **“void.”**

### **What does the Apostle Paul say about “darkness?”**

The apostle Paul has some very practical advice for the Christian today to apply to his own heart and life, based upon the Biblical doctrine of darkness starting in the second verse in the entire Bible, **“Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for**

**what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with DARKNESS?”**

There is no fellowship between light with darkness, therefore God Himself divided the light from the darkness. To accept darkness is to accept sin.

He also said for a sound Biblical practical application from a sound Biblical doctrine such as darkness – **“And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of DARKNESS, but rather reprove them”** (Eph.5:11).

Do you know dear friend, God practices what He preaches? He isn't a hypocrite. In Genesis 1:2, God reprovved Lucifer and judged the sons of God and as a result – a flood (which we will further discuss) and divided the light from the darkness.

Let's move on!

### **“darkness was upon the face of the deep”**

Now we've come to one of the most important phrases in the Bible that is probably “the” major stumbling block for our Fundamentalist friends concerning our subject at hand, the Gap Fact outside of Romans 5:12. They can't divide the truth concerning Adam and Eve in Roman 5:12 so therefore God has shut there eyes (spiritual darkness) concerning this phrase. This phrase is mentioned only in one other place of the entire Bible, Job 38:30. Tabb, in his booklet “THE GAP THEORY” refers to this verse by saying the following,

[“Just for the record, all Bible references to “the deep” concerning water are references to water on or in this earth, never to a body of water between here and heaven. Moreover, heaven being north in relation to the earth, the face of the deep is frozen (polar ice cap) from heaven's vantage point.”] p. 43

“The deep in Scripture is always something on this earth. It generally has to do with oceans and ground water. Sometimes it refers to hell (e.g., Rom. 10:7), but the context clearly shows that. Even so, it is still something on this earth, under our feet. It is used of the bottomless pit in Luke 8:31 (“the deep”). In fact, the same word in Luke 8:31 is translated “bottomless pit” in Revelation 9:2. It is always down. It is never up.” P. 71

Well, Bro. Tabb obviously “dropped the ball.” He “fumbled” and lost the game. He “choked.” Anybody who thinks that the deep is simply some body of water “on this earth,” or the “North Pole” or “frozen water” on this earth is and has never taken a concordance to find the revelation of God concerning **“the face of the deep.”** Any attempt to omit the revelation of God in Job 38:30 is another “naiEVE” approach to Biblical interpretation of the scriptures – omission.

Before we get to Job 38, let's go back first of all to Genesis 1:8, 9 right in the middles of our 6 (24-hour) days creation of **“the heavens and the earth, which are now”** (2 Pet. 3:7) we find that the land was to **“appear.”**

Note the word **“deep”** in verse 2 which implies “waters.” Then note that because **“waters”** is used throughout the first chapter till verse 20, we want to answer the

question – Where did the waters come from? Well, for that let’s look at how God first of all starts with the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven and works His way down to the 1<sup>st</sup> heaven.

In verse 2, (the number 2 in the Bible referring to division) is located **“the face of the deep.”** We’ll study a bit later this deep but suffice it to say for now that God moved upon the face of it. This is where the third heaven is located. John describes it as **“a sea of glass”** (Rev. 4:6) or **“glass mingled with fire”** (Rev. 15:2). There are many more references to this that we’ll study more specifically later.

Next, let’s move on. In verses 3-5 is the continuation of the first day. Notice that God now has to DIVIDE the **“light from the darkness.”** (v. 4). And to end His first days’ work it says, Genesis 1:5 **“And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.”**

The “Day” here is not the day when the sun was created on the 4<sup>th</sup> day, but absolute “Day” up in the third heaven which he divides from “darkness” which is now already the second heaven of which is spoken of in the next verse on the 2<sup>nd</sup> day of creation.

Genesis 1:6, 7

**And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.**

**And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so.**

So you have waters which are in the 2<sup>nd</sup> heaven that are separated from the waters that are in the first heaven on the earth. How do we know that?

Genesis 1:8, 9

**8 And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.**

This ends the second days’ work of the Lord.

Here is where we come down now to the first heaven on the third day.

**9 And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so.**

Note how that the dry land appears which is proof that the earth was flooded. And so now God wants the earth to **“appear,”** but that couldn’t happen until the WATERS under the heaven be gathered. Where did the waters come from? Well they came from the deep above in verse 2.

Tabb here fails to rightly divide the word again by combining two different firmaments into one by twisting Bible terminology with his own –

“The word ‘firmament’ means an expanse or a spread out thinness...”  
“Refer to Chart #6 and notice that gap theorists label outer space the firmament. The firmament is the first heaven (Gen. 1:6-8). The first heaven is our atmosphere. How do we know it refers to the first heaven? Look at verse

**20 And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl [that] may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven**

Was God talking about the birds flying in outer space? No, He was not. Birds fly only in the first heaven, the atmospheric heaven. And the atmosphere is called “the open firmament of heaven.” There is no reason to think there are two different firmaments in Genesis 1 [Again, gap theorists invalidate their argument for comparing like terms in Genesis and Jeremiah. They do not accept like terms as meaning the same thing even in the same chapter, for it does not suit their theory.]” (Tabb, “The Gap Theory” p. 76, 77).

Of course Tabb is not going to go to Job 38:30, the “key” (Luke 11:52) that unlocks this treasure of truth that Tabb shut up by his private interpretation.

Now let’s go to Job 38:30 and find other places of revelation that will shed light on the waters mentioned in Genesis 1:2. You couldn’t possibly think Job 38:30 as being “on this earth” or this “atmosphere” or an “expanse” of the first heaven while Job 38:30 is surrounded with verses 29-32 dealing with things above your head in the SECOND HEAVEN right in the context,

**“Out of whose womb came the ice? And the hoary frost of HEAVEN, (above your head) who hath gendered it?**

**The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen.**

**Canst thou bind the sweet influences of PLEIADES, (above your head) or loose the bands of ORION? (above your head).**

**Canst thou bring forth MAZZAROTH in his season? (above your head) or canst thou guide ARCTURUS WITH HIS SONS?” (above your head).**

What about five witnesses right in the context to prove that “**the face of the deep**” above your head!

Not only that, right in the context up pops the word “**sons.**” The stars are a visual explanation of the invisible, the sons of God that were in existence before Genesis 1:1; that existed at the time of Adam’s fall; that were present and visible during Noah’s flood; that will be visible on this earth in the Tribulation.

**“For the INVISIBLE THINGS of him from the creation of the world are CLEARLY SEEN, (they can’t see it) being understood (neither do they understand) by the things that are made, EVEN HIS ETERNAL POWER AND GODHEAD; so that they (at this point, the brethren) are without excuse” (Rom. 1:20).**

Our “creationist” friends missed the blessing!

There is absolutely no doubt as to the location of the deep of Genesis 1:2. That is not to elimination deep places of water on this earth. But you must learn how to “rightly divide the word of truth.”

Now for some additional revelation concerning this particular truth, let’s go to Proverbs and see what Solomon under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit says (present tense 2 Tim. 3:16),

**When he prepared the heavens, I was there: when he set a compass UPON THE FACE OF THE DEPTH:**

**When he established the clouds ABOVE: when he strengthened the fountains of the deep:**

**When he gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment: when he appointed the foundations of the earth: (Prov. 8:27-29).**

Now there are a few things to notice in this passage –

1.) The **“heavens”** (v. 27) would be that which is above your head. Why is that?

2.) Notice this particular phrase, **“the face of the depth.”** This is another reference to “the deep” in Genesis 1:2. Why is that? Let’s study further.

3.) Notice in the following verse (v. 28) he mentions **“the deep.”** Here it is written in the singular. All is clear when you read yet further, in verse 29, we read, **“When he gave to the sea his decree...”**

4.) The phrase **“the sea”** is not a reference to **“the sea”** as in Genesis 1:26 for that is speaking of the waters of “the Seas,” (plural). The sea is a phrase simply encompassing all the seas together. Therefore you couldn’t make the distinction between which sea Moses is talking about in Genesis 1:26, for there are many seas – The Mediterranean Sea, Caribbean Sea, South China Sea, Bering Sea, East China Sea, Yellow Sea, Sea of Japan, Black Sea, Red Sea, and Baltic Sea.

But if you were talk about **“the sea”** in the context of **“heavens”** (Prov. 8:27) in the context of **“the face of the depth”** in the very same verse, while comparing scripture with scripture (as the Bible says 1 Cor. 2:13), there is only one **“sea”** (singular) that is spoken of throughout many portions of scripture and that is located nowhere on this earth. It is above our heads for **“the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2) cannot be mistaken with any kinds of depths here on this earth. It is Job that knew well before our ‘conservative’ brethren who missed the revelation were ever born. Job says, **“the waters are hid as with a stone, and the FACE OF THE DEEP is frozen”** (Job 38:30) especially when you’ve got a verse before it, (verse 29) and three verses after that (verses 31-33) that clearly show you that the context in no way could be talking about something on this earth.

## Chapter 9

### **My Thoughts are not Your Thoughts and “the Deep”**

Many times throughout the scriptures the Lord, when he dealt with some one he would be talking about something altogether differently than what the other person was thinking. For example, when He talked with Nicodemus about being born again, (John 3:3) Nicodemus was thinking about the birth of a child by a woman the second time saying, **“How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother’s womb, and be born?”** You see, Nicodemus was thinking of a physical birth, while Jesus was talking about a birth that was altogether different; a spiritual birth.

Another example of this is in the following chapter of John where the Lord initiated a conversation with a woman at a well concerning a drink of water (John 4:7). Her reaction was negative because of racial indifferences between the Jews and the mixed breeds of the Samaritans, **“for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.”** She said (v. 9).



Now watch what the Lord says in verse 10, **“Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.”** The woman, at this moment hasn’t “gotten” it yet. She is thinking about water in the well, **“The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?”** Notice! She is thinking about water in a well. The blessed Lord is talking about something altogether different.

You see, that is the same case when it comes to rightly dividing the word of truth concerning many other words in the Holy Bible. For example just because the word **“brother”** is mentioned in the word of God, that doesn’t mean that it is always a brother “in Christ.” Many of our Baptist brethren think that they can lose their salvation by applying the word “brethren” to Christians as in the case of Hebrews 3:1. The context is Jewish brethren that have to endure “to the end” (v. 6) as in Matthew 24:13 which is obviously a passage that has to do with the Great Tribulation when the church will have already been raptured (1 Thess. 4:16-18). The Book of Hebrews is not basically, doctrinally written to the Church (1 Cor. 10:32) but to HEBREWS, Jews, Jewish brethren.

Many of our Christian brethren are thinking one thing, while the Bible has its own terminology of its own words, **“For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD.**

**For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts”** (Isa. 55:8, 9).

For another example of how the Bible must carefully be studied and divided is when the Lord was at the wedding in Cana he turned the water into wine. At first glance at that passage in John chapter 2, one would think that he created fermented wine. The modern commentators missed all of the cross-references that explain clearly that the wine was simply a non-fermented wine that represented the eternal blood of God (Acts 20:28) that was shed at the **“hour”** of Christ’s death. **“Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? Mine hour is not yet come”** (John 2:4). Well, if anybody took a Concordance and looked up the word “hour” he would come to the obvious conclusion as to what he was talking about, (John 7:30; 8:20; 12:23, 27), the hour of His death.

Not only that, it is obvious that the wedding took place on the **“THIRD day,”** (Jn.2:1). If one were to compare scripture with scripture (1 Cor. 2:13), he would see that what Hosea said lines up with the THIRD DAY of John 2:1, **“After two days will he revive (KJV) us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight,”** (Hosea 6:2). The context shows that it is the end of the Tribulation and into the Millennium, that is, THE THIRD DAY.

If you are going to be a Bible-believer and believe what God said in 2 Peter 3:8 then it is necessary to understand that that, **“one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.”**

You see, the third day is the 3<sup>rd</sup> one-thousandth year after the cross. It is the mark of the one-thousand year reign of Jesus Christ.

When Jesus instituted the Lord’s Supper he said to them that he would not drink anymore until the **“DAY”** (which would be the **“THIRD DAY,”** Jn.2:1) when He drinks it **“NEW in His Father’s kingdom”** (Matt.26:29). New wine in the Bible is never fermented wine. So therefore on the **“THIRD DAY”** what Jesus Christ did by turning the

water into wine at the wedding was a prophecy of what He was going to repeat—that is, partake of **“NEW”** (Matt.26:29) WINE. [See our book, “Wine and the Lord’s Supper in Light of the Bible.”]

Proof again that the serious student of the Bible should not take it for granted that just because he sees the word **“tongue”** in the Bible, as all Charismatics do, that it means, “astala-shandai-antai-bowtai-bla-bla-bla, etc. as Benny Hinn, Copeland, and all the other modern apostates (along with Catholics) are teaching. And just because the elders of the Church of Christ see the word **“baptism”** in the Bible that it means “water.” And just because you see the word **“inheritance”** that doesn’t mean “free gift,” or salvation, (Gal.5:21). There is an inheritance that comes automatically with salvation (Eph. 1:11, 14; Phil.3:20, 21; I Cor.15:50-56; Acts 20:32; Col.1:13; 1 Pet.1:4) and an inheritance that must be earned (2 Tim.2:12; Rom.8:17; Luke 19:17; Col.3:24). And if the Christian lives a carnal life he can lose his inheritance (Gal.5:21) but not his soul.

The same idea holds concerning the issue of **“THE FACE OF THE DEEP.”** Moses writes **“the face of the deep.”** Job writes later the REVELATION and **“key of knowledge”** (Luke 11:52) **“THE FACE OF THE DEEP”** (Job. 38:30) to interpret what Moses said; no commentaries, to Hebrew language, no lexicons and no ministries to “help God out” explain what He wanted to say. **“In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall EVERY WORD BE ESTABLISHED”** (2 Cor. 13:1)

In a later chapter we are going to further discuss this body of water called **“the deep”** in which is a “sea monster” called “Leviathan” (Job 41 and Isa. 27:1).

When the scriptures talk about a body of water, **“the deep”** (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30) most Christians automatically think of water on this earth. That is the typical explanation of Creation Scientists; Kent Hovind, Henry Morris, etc., and many more Fundamentalists such as Mr. Tabb. They also believe that there is no such animal as a supernatural being as Leviathan. They think that Leviathan is only an aquatic animal somewhere on this earth in some kind of ocean. Their foundation for this is Psa. 148:7 **“Praise the LORD from the earth, ye dragons, and all deeps.”** As all the new modern versions have changed verses that mention dragons so the same unclean spirit has convinced modern conservative scholars and teachers that there can not be any dragons above our heads. Leviathan is a dragon; that much is clear from Isaiah 27:1-3 and Revelation 12:3. But Leviathan, in Psalm 104:26, could be a whale [my opinion], although he still represents Satan (see Jonah 2). Satan is typified, in nature, not only by a serpent, but by a whale; and, as far as that goes, by ravens and vultures: see Mark 4:4, 15, and a lion, 1 Pet. 5:8. So in Psalm 148:7, the Creationists and modern Fundamentalists were right about Psalm 104:26 but they missed the revelation about a supernatural Leviathan as mentioned in Job 41. Although the whale is a type of Satan, and this is why the term “leviathan” is applied to in one time in the Scriptures. He is distinct from the beasts and cattle. The blinded Alexandrians interpreted the other thirty-two verses in the light of this one verse (Psa. 104:26), so when they got to Job 41, all they could say that it was a “crocodile,” “sea monster,” “water buffalo,” “hippopotamus,” “dinosaur,” or, as the NKJV, exact identity unknown.” Unknown to any Bible-rejecting, Bible-correcting Nicolaitan.

The “dragons” here typify whales, and that is why the “deeps” are mentioned with them. The Holy Spirit has used both terms in two different localities so it would confuse the Bible-correctors. The dragon is in the deeps (Gen. 1:6, 7; Job 41:32; Psa. 68:22; Hab.

3:10), but dragons can be in the deep, on this earth, without being devils (Job 32:29). They can be either whales (Psa. 104:26) or devils (Psa. 44:19). There are two bodies of water called **“the deep”** or **“the deeps,”** and there are two Leviathans; one down here to represent the one in the deeps over your head.

It is absolutely astounding to see how the mind simply closes once you reject light in one portion of scripture how much more light is rejected. All the scholars got all the references screwed up. They tripped over Genesis 1:2 and from that point it gets darker and darker.

Notice this doctrine of “the deep” repeated in another place.

**“Praise ye the LORD. Praise ye the LORD from the heavens: praise him in the heights.”** The “heavens” are ABOVE your head. That’s the third heaven.

**“Praise ye him, all his angels: praise ye him, all his hosts.”** They are ABOVE your head.

**“Praise ye him, sun and moon: praise him, all ye stars of light.”** There is the second heaven that is ABOVE your head.

**“Praise him, ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that be above the heavens”** (Psalm 148:4).

Now what was Tabb saying!? As we mentioned at the start of this work, the main problem with many of our brethren, or the difference between getting revelation from the Holy Bible or passing up revelation is determined by whether a man is going to learn how to rightly divide the word of truth or not. That is what it all boils down to. That is the problem with the Pentecostals who can’t divide between the Old Testament and the New. That is the problem with the Charismatics, Holiness, Catholics, Orthodox and others such as Dake who thinks that you can lose your salvation. The same problem lies with many of our Fundamentalist brethren who think that people in the Old Testament were saved the same way those in the church age are saved. Those in the Old Testament “looked forward to the cross and those in the church age look back to the cross.” Sounds nice doesn’t it? Jack Hyles thought that Moses was a Christian. Tabb believes there is no differences between salvation in the Old Testament and that of the New Testament. They left off “rightly dividing the word of truth.” So also is our case at hand. Tabb can’t make the distinction between the deep that is above our head and deeps that are spoken of on this earth. **“A false balance is abomination to the LORD”** (Proverbs 11:1). It is the same problem that ‘Jehovah’s’ witnesses have. They can see only one side of Jesus Christ, His human side. They left off of seeing the side of His DEITY. They are not able to DIVIDE the Book, let alone not knowing which Book is God’s seeing that they have their own ‘bible.’

There is yet another witness of this doctrine from a little ‘ole country boy, Amos, - **“Seek him that maketh the seven stars and Orion, and turneth the shadow of death into the morning, and maketh the day dark with night: THAT CALLETH FOR THE WATERS OF THE SEA, AND POURETH THEM OUT UPON THE FACE OF THE EARTH: The LORD is his name:”** (Amos 5:8).

Notice that water came from a **“SEA”** and that is [“POURED”] upon the face of the earth.”

Anybody knows that when water has already been spilt on the table top that you can't pour them same waters on the table top, because they are already on the table top. That serves as an illustration of the waters that are already on the earth. They couldn't be poured onto the earth. They are already on the earth. But if you were to take a glass of water and pour that water onto the table top, then you'd have the right illustration concerning what God did with the "sea" of waters over your head, he "[poured] **them out upon the face of the earth.**"

Jeremiah also witnesses to a great body of water above our heads,

**"When he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens, and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures"** (Jer. 10:13).

Notice that the "**multitude of waters is in the heavens**" (plural, above your head) is divided from the "**vapours**" (which would be the clouds in the first heaven connected with lightnings and rain, also in the first heaven.

The "**multitude of waters in the heavens**" is dealing with the deep of Genesis 1:6-8.

**"In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened"** (Gen. 7:11).

Now here is another verse similar to Genesis 7:11 with added revelation.

**"The fountains also of the deep and the windows of heaven were stopped, and the rain from heaven was restrained"** (Gen. 8:2).

Now get the picture. Just as the Samaritan couldn't figure out which water Jesus was talking about at the well, (John 4:11, 12), these modern apostates don't know whether they are coming or going when dealing with the different "deep(s)," and water(s)" of the Bible.

Now it isn't difficult at all to determine from which heaven come vapours. Three times the Bible tells from where come vapours. First David testifies to the vapours, -

**"He causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; he maketh lightnings for the rain; he bringeth the wind out of his treasures"** (Psalm 135:7).

For a second witness Jeremiah confirms what David said, -

**"When he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens, and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures"** (Jeremiah 10:13).

Notice here that Jeremiah gives us an added revelation in that there is a **“multitude of waters (plural) in the heavens (plural) that is DISTINCT from that which on the earth and its atmosphere “the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth...”** There is a BIG difference which Tabb refuses to see.

Again Jeremiah stated the very same thing in Jeremiah 51:16 for emphasis so that you’d get the point.

Dr. Peter S. Ruckman writes,

“The “fountains of the great deep” have been mistaken for water coming up from under the earth or the result of earthquakes and volcanoes disrupting the surface. This is interesting conjecture, and it may be true that volcanic and seismic disturbances rent the earth’s surface. However, **the great deep** is hardly to be connected with the Pacific or Atlantic or some other small puddle...” “The great deep is plainly the same body of water whose top is “frozen,” according to Job 38:30, and the mass of water it contains would drown out the solar system in forty days if the proper “windows” were opened. (As an eternal example to the Y.H.G.S. society, the Lord has inserted into the historical narrative of 2 Kings 7 a remarkable story. A man thought that the possibility of getting a cheap meal had the same odds against it that there would be in believing that there were **“windows”** in Heaven. He lived to see people rushing out to buy their cheap dinner, in a day when they were willing to pay \$50.00 for half a loaf of bread, but he didn’t get to the table himself. He got “crushed in the gate” for doubting what God had said...”

“The deep is not a deep place on the earth; it is the deep place about which Paul prays that God will give the Christian an understanding. (See Eph. 3:18, which is universally misquoted as “the length, breadth and depth of the love of Christ.” The verse does not say that. Don’t make it say what it doesn’t say just because you can’t believe it.) ...” (The Book of Genesis p. 208).

## **Chapter 10 Adam and His Fall**

Now that we have established the fact that there was sin before Adam fell, let’s now deal with Adam’s fall and see where the “contradiction” lays between all the verses that we saw about Eve’s sin and Romans 5:12.

As we have already mentioned the modern creationist uses Romans 5:12 to overthrow the entire Bible to prove that there was no gap in Genesis 1:2. They argue that since sin did not enter the world. They can’t figure out that by the time Adam was created his world was already the **SECOND** world distinct from the **“heavens (plural) were of old”** of 2 Peter 3:5 and Genesis 1:1).

Why is it that God accounts that through Adam all have sinned? Of course all the weight was on his shoulders for he was the “bread winner,” the head of the home, created first. But with all things put aside, why is it that Romans 5:12 is in the Book, even though

it was a woman's movement that has led the body of Christ back under the Whore's umbrella (Rev. 12:9). Men have fallen for the woman's "equal rights" movement. The red dragon has deceived the whole world. It all started with Eve as the first person to sin but it was the man that fell and "gave in" to the heresy. Adam didn't stand his ground and literally, spiritually "fell for her" and eventually physically died. Because of man's lack of courage, inner fortitude, and power of the words of God and Holy Ghost, the whore of Revelation 17 is increasing in numbers. God told Adam, "...**Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life**" (Gen. 3:17).

Satan fell along with the sons of God and was judged by God. Satan tempted Eve, Eve sinned, but Adam sinned also by "giving in." Technically, if Adam did not take of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and of evil he could have gone on with a marriage with an "unsaved" wife. He didn't have any "grounds for divorce." She didn't desert him. She didn't commit fornication (Matt. 19:9; 1 Cor. 6:16-18) [well! 1 John 3:12] and she didn't die physically (1 Cor. 7:39). So what was left? Well, he "fell for her" and he also wanted to "die for her." After all those two cases that often happen with a husband and a wife; either he falls for a "doozy" or a man dies for his wife. After all that is what all the "hero" movies are about, some man giving his life for his "sweetheart." But our Fundamental friends missed out of some more revelation. They couldn't get Romans 5:12 straight. It was just a matter of "rightly dividing the word of truth."

- 1.) Eve, although she sinned before Adam, is divided from him in the sense that Adam is the Federal Head of the human race, not Eve.
- 2.) Although they were "husband and wife" it is Adam that carries the seed. It is the seed of the man wherein sin passed upon all men, for all have sinned.
- 3.) Technically if Adam had not sinned and God would have given him another wife, [Oh boy! Another operation, another rib shot!] that would have made two wives, but then again that was not God's original plan. Just ask Abraham what he went through. Just ask Jacob what he went through with Leah. Here's a good one, just ask Solomon. That's a good one. He'll give you some advice about polygamy. Adam could have propagated with another wife that had not sinned and he would have "replenished" the earth. But that is not how the story goes.

I know, you are saying, "Well, if I was in his shoes, I would have done this and this...I would have told my wife off and..." We're all faulty, fallen sinners in Adam. We would have done the same thing that Adam did, if not worse. Proof? Well, just ask your kids whether you've "given in" to your wife at one time or another. They'll tell it like it is!

- 4.) The seed of Adam is corrupt, therefore we are corrupt. And anytime anybody else is born they are born corrupt because of the seed of Adam after he had sinned, not after Eve had sinned. That's the difference.
- 5.) That is why it is necessary to be born-again, "**Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever**" (1 Pet. 1:23).

## The Doctrine of Federal Headship

Now we will further discuss our subject at hand that has to do with Adam being the head of his race. It is termed as “Headship.” Do not let that scare you because there are other words not mentioned in the Bible but are used simply to explain a Biblical doctrine. For example the word “Trinity,” is not in the Bible but speaks of the Triune God. The words “Rapture,” and “Millennium,” are not written in scripture but they describe Biblical doctrine that can most certainly be proven from scripture. So, our subject at hand, “Headship” simply describes that Adam is the head of his particular race in his world.

The argument that is brought forth by the non-gapper theorists is that Genesis 3:7 mentions that Adam and Eve’s eyes were opened only AFTER *Adam* had taken of the fruit and ate. Genesis 3:7 is a general statement stating a fact of their eyes being opened. That verse must be seen in light of what James wrote concerning each individual **“Then when LUST hath conceived, it bringeth forth SIN: and SIN, when it is finished, BRINGETH FORTH DEATH”** (James 1:14, 15).

Eve was no exception. She was **“IN THE TRANSGRESSION”** (1 Tim. 2:14) and **WHOSOEVER** committeth sin (including Eve) **transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.”** She already had the law in her heart but rebelled. She showed that by misquoting God.

This subject of federal headship needs to be expounded upon simply because to many brethren Romans 5:12 means that there was neither sin nor death before Adam. Therefore they automatically negate the possibility of a previous world (Heb. 1:2; 11:3; 2 Pet. 3:5-7). Unfortunately many Fundamentalists have falsely accused Bible believers and others to make you think that Chalmers (1780-1847) the Scottish theologian was influenced by Darwin (1809-1882) to accommodate evolution by teaching a gap. Tabb writes

“By mid-twentieth century, now a hundred years since Chalmers, the theory had spread among many prominent Protestants. Two of note are Merrill F. Unger, professor of Old Testament studies at Dallas Theological Seminary (d. 1980), and a well-known Presbyterian author, Donald Grey Barnhouse (d. 1960). It had also begun to weave its thread among Independent Baptists. A lot of people have picked up Chalmers’ theory along the way, and many of them refer back to him. They should give him credit, for he quite obviously was the theory’s originator. It all goes all the way back to Chalmers.” (The Gap Theory, p. 4)

Kent Hovind, while in prison (2013) has put out some rather ridiculous material stating that he had been deceived for the last 38 year believing that the Church would be raptured before the Great Tribulation. Now he’s come to know the ‘truth’ and believes that the Church is going through the Tribulation and only at the END of the Tribulation will the Church be raptured. Not only that. Hovind believes that the “theory” (as he has mentioned) of the Pre-Tribulation Rapture of the Church was thought up by a 15 year old Scottish girl in 1830. Here’s the quote –

“My longtime friend and Pastor, Steve Anderson and THOUSANDS of others (myself included) have come to realize that we “independent, fundamental, temperamental, right wing, radical, chicken eatin’, Bible believing Baptists” **have been deceived about the rapture for the last 180 years! For 38 years of my Christian life I was taught and believed in the “pre-trib” rapture idea that was made up by a 15 year Scottish old girl in 1830!** I just trusted the “prophecy experts” to have studied it and to know what they were teaching. NOT a good idea! “Study to shew YOURSELVES approved unto God...” Hmmm? I failed at that on this topic! Not any more though!...”

You can see for yourself all of Hovind’s, quotes from various websites and blogs listed here –

Pastor Steven Anderson’s puffed up, bloated youtube.  
<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oN-34DADqvs>

Rudy reading a letter from behind his pick-up truck.  
<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=fHkzASX2d6Q>

This was posted in Anderson’s blog from Hovind.  
<http://sanderson1611.blogspot.com/2012/01/message-from-kent-hovind.html>

Kent Hovind’s blog –  
<http://www.kenthovindblog.com/?p=1030>

From site of a James Jpn –  
<http://jamesjpn.net/2012/12/10/kent-hovind-changes-his-position-on-the-doctrine-of-pre-tribulation-rapture/>

Film put together by Anderson on the Tribulation.  
<http://www.afterthetribulation.com/index2.php#!/HOME>

All of this comes from a man who refused to take 2 Timothy 2:15 LITERALLY. When any Funny-mental-ist refuses the Biblical position concerning dispensations and rightly dividing the word of truth, God will expose that man’s heresies for trying to join things together that God DIVIDED. And God practiced DIVIDING in the fourth verse of the entire Bible because the DARKNESS is what God had to separate the light from.

These modern day Christians that are produced in your average modern day colleges that talk about “separation” and “standards” are so blind that they can’t even see that God SEPARATED the light from the darkness and called the light good but not the darkness.

So just as Hovind tried to dupe the body of Christ into thinking that the Gap Fact is something that just popped up a century ago, now he’s got you thinking that the doctrine of the Pre-Tribulation Rapture of the Church is a “theory” made up by a 15 year-old Scottish girl back in 1830. More baloney for the suckers, including Hovind.



Let's hear from a Christian that lived before Charles Darwin. This is important because here is where the crux of the matter begins. Was there another world (2 Pet. 3:5-7) other than Adams? Here is what John Gill (1697-1771, an English Baptist) says about the Headship of Adam and the sin the he committed –

“it was a single sin, and the first sin committed in OUR world; [Exactly right, implying there was another world] I say in OUR world, BECAUSE SIN WAS COMMITTED BEFORE, [There you have it right from the eighteenth century] in the world above, in heaven, by the apostate spirits, the angels that sinned; [note- passed tense] but with their sin men have no concern; or they are not made sinners by it; but by THAT SIN WHICH FIRST ENTERED INTO OUR WORLD, [Notice how Gill makes the distinction] by the one man, Adam; and this the only one of his sins, and that which was first committed by him, and not any after-sins of his; it is what, and it is the only one that was committed by him, whilst he stood the FEDERAL-HEAD OF HIS POSTERITY: that he was a covenant-head to us has been proved already; and that he was such when this was committed by him is plain, because his posterity were then considered in him, as a FEDERAL-HEAD, and sinned in him, which brought death upon them all (Rom, v. 12). But no sooner had Adam committed this first sin, by which the covenant with him was broke, but he ceased to be a covenant-head; the law given him, as a covenant of works, was no more so; the promise of life by it ceased; the sanction of it, death, took place ; and he was no more in a capacity of yielding sinless obedience; and so could not procure life for him self and his.; wherefore he no longer standing as a federal-head to his posterity, they had no more concern with his after-sins, than with his repentance and good works, both of which, no doubt, were performed by him; yet by his repentance they are not reckoned repenting sinners; nor are his good works accounted to them.

So there you have it in the eighteenth century from John Gill, the theologian that preached in England before Spurgeon's time. He mentions the Federal Headship of Adam and not Eve. Note also that Gill mentions that fact that “SIN WAS COMMITTED BEFORE” (in another world) “...in the world above, in heaven, by the apostate spirits, the angels that sinned; but with their sin men have no concern; or they are not made sinners by it; but by THAT SIN WHICH FIRST ENTERED INTO OUR WORLD...”

Note Gill's ability to make the proper DIVISION, by “**rightly dividing the word of truth**” according to 2 Timothy 2:15 and making the proper distinction between the world of apostate spirits, “the angels that SINNED” and “that sin which first entered into OUR world, by one man Adam...”

Unfortunately Tabb wasn't quite thorough enough in his findings. And John Gill didn't believe in evolution either. He died in 1771. That is 68 years before Charles Darwin was 30 years old when he first announced his scientific theory of natural selection (1858). Not only that Moses goes back quite a ways before Gill, so does Jeremiah, David, Isaiah, and all the other 'Bible believers' before Chalmers or Gill.

Let's take Gill's comment from Genesis 3:6 which deals with the historical account of Eve sinning BEFORE Adam and that God does not account the human race fallen on account of her sin because she is not the head of the race. Concerning Genesis 3:6 which reads, **"...she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat"**

Gill says, -

"If Eve only had eaten of the forbidden fruit, it could only have personally affected herself, and she only would have died; and had this been the case, God would have formed another woman for Adam, for the propagation of mankind, had he stood; though since he fell as well as she, it is needless to inquire, and may seem too bold to say what otherwise would have been the case."

Now there you have it again. A man that lived before Darwin and before Chalmers witnessing of the truth that sin existed before Adam fell.

It cannot be stressed enough the connection of Romans 5:12 with Genesis 1:2 because while the non-gap theorists says there can be no sin before Adam, no world that was before Adam, that means that evil didn't exist until Adam fell. We've gone into great length to show that to say there was no sin and death before Adam is overseeing so many other scriptures and being blinded as to how to reconcile conflicting verses. It comes down to obeying a negative truth, **"RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH."** Now for a comment by Dr. Ruckman,

"This present world has sin and, as a result, death because of Adam. This doctrine is known as federal headship. The doctrine is that God passes blessings, curses, and judgment down through a family, tribe, nation, or race due to the actions of one who represented those people before God.

God passed a curse down through all of Ham's children and descendants due to father Ham's sin. But God used Canaan as the federal head, since Ham had been blessed...Israel gets the land of Canaan back because of a promise made to Abraham (Gen. 15), the nation's federal head. Jews suffer at the hands of Gentiles to this day because their leader said, "His blood be on us, and on our children" (Matt. 27:25). That is how federal headship operates. Individuals might get out from a curse, judgment, or even a blessing because of personal action, but the group, as a whole, still bears that thing that God put on the representative. When it came to humanity as a whole, Adam was our federal head. In fact, he was given dominion over the entire earthly creation (Gen. 1:28). That is why when Adam sinned, the ground was cursed, as well (Gen. 3:17-19).

Now, when Adam sinned, his spirit died. The image of God was marred in him. When his son Seth was born, the Bible says Seth was begotten in Adam's image; i.e., a live body destined to die, a living soul, and a dead spirit (Eph. 2:1). Adam was "the son of God" (Luke 3:38) while Seth was a child of disobedience and a child of wrath (Eph. 2:2-3). Seth's situation is our

situation: we are all descended from Adam; we all have an old, sinful nature passed down to us from Adam; and we are actually “in Adam.” We die because Adam died.

The modern creationist uses Romans 5:12 to try to prove that there was no gap of events that occurred between the original creation of Genesis 1:1 and the beginning of the re-creation of Genesis 1:2. The creationists argue that since sin did not enter the world until Adam that no death or judgment occurred before Genesis 3.

Of course, that is nonsense. Adam was not the first person to sin. Paul said, the “the WOMAN was in the transgression” (1 Tim. 2:14). And the Genesis record shows that “**the WOMAN was in the transgression**” before the man (Gen. 3:6). Eve’s transgression did not bring sin into the world, even though she sinned before her husband did.

Moreover, the first sin was not even committed by a human. It was committed by Lucifer.

Romans 5:12 has no bearing, doctrinally, on the world of Genesis 1:1 whatsoever. The creationists would say that that could not have happened because of Romans 5:12. But even if there was no other life besides “the sons of God” (and the Scriptures never clearly say otherwise), it would still have nothing to do with Romans 5:12. That verse deals with the present creation. Romans 5:12 has nothing to do with the earth of Genesis 1:1. There were no “men” on the earth of Genesis 1:1. Adam was not the “head” of anything before Genesis 1:28. Adam was the “head” of the world that now exists.

Genesis 1 has two separate creations, with two separate federal heads, and two separate judgments on sin. Unfortunately, the creationists don’t know what they are talking about, and to use Romans 5:12 to prove otherwise is wresting the Scripture to their own harm.”

### **Death, judgment and “after that”**

If we were to go along with our brethren and teach that there was no gap, in light of Romans 5:12 no matter how you look at Genesis 1:2, you cannot deny the fact that sin still existed before Adam fell. For the Lord said to Adam “**for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.**” (Gen. 2:17). Let’s face it, Adam didn’t die physically “**the day that** [he ate] did he? No. Of course that was about 897 years later (Gen. 5:5) figuring that he took of the fruit when he was about 33 ½ years old. The death that he died the moment he ate was SPIRITUAL DEATH. So it would be no problem to prove that when God judged “**the world that then was** (2 Peter 3:6) doesn’t mean that the fallen angels, “the sons of God” had to die physically. They still existed but they could no longer dwell in the third heaven. God judged them.

When Eve sinned she died, spiritually. When Adam sinned he died, spiritually. The Lord said, “**in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die**” (Gen. 2:17). A great many Christians can’t figure out how it could be that angels were judged and yet

continue to exist. There are those who follow Armstrongism who think that the death spoken of to Adam was physical death. That is what the Jehovah Witnesses believe also. The interesting thing about the death of Eve and Adam is when they each partook of the fruit they didn't DROP DEAD. The ignorant Jehovah's Witnesses believe that it was a physical death that took place when Eve and Adam sinned to eliminate any spiritual death that sends a sinner to a second death, the lake of fire (Rev. 20:15; 21:8).

Now understanding what God meant when he said **"thou shalt surely die"** is important to understand that when the sons of God fell, it does not mean that they no longer existed. That scientific fact can be observed today when a sinner sins it doesn't mean that he know longer exists. Either he pays the consequences with a bad spirit, a loss of light, a loss of responsibilities, a bad conscience, fear, lying to cover those sins, and many more consequences and eventually with physical death. But even then that does not mean that he is totally annihilated, i.e., no longer existing. After his physical death he drops down to a literal, physical place called hell and eventually winds up in a physical, literal burning lake of fire.

Now take your Bibles and read Genesis 6:4. **"There were giants in the earth in those days; AND ALSO AFTER THAT, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown."**

We're dealing here with the sons of God and their sin, and what happened BEFORE Noah's flood, and AFTER the flood, **"AFTER THAT."** That doesn't mean they no longer existed. Many were judged a second time by being locked up, **"For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment"** (2 Peter 2:4). The first time they "died" it was a spiritual fall and they were now confined only to the second heaven. The second time they fell they were physically thrown to jail. They will be judged eventually a third time when they stand before believers and we will judge angels (1 Cor. 6:1-3). Others continued their same sinful acts which produced giants after the flood.

God's judgment fell upon Satan and the sons of God. This is revelation and the **"key of knowledge"** (Luke 11:52) which unlocks the treasures of the wisdom and revelation of God as to what happened in Genesis 1:2. Just because God judged sin, does not mean that the fallen sons of God no longer existed.

**"And the LORD said unto Abram, AFTER THAT Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward"** (Gen. 13:14).

Lot still existed **"after that"** he was separated from him" (Abraham).

Observe again comparing scripture with scripture how God Himself will explain His own terminology, define his own words and phrases and reveal what had happened before with added or progressive revelation. Notice some important factors concerning the devil,

**"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand."**

**And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,**

**And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and AFTER THAT he must be loosed a little season” Rev. 20:3**

Notice that there is a literal key of a literal bottomless pit where a literal devil is literally cast into, and is literally shut up by a literal seal. Just because he is shut up for a thousand years does not mean he no longer exists. He was judged but yet to return.

So this is added revelation as to what happened in the past when God judged Satan and the sons of God in Genesis 1:2. **“After that”** they show up in the garden but in a fallen state. Satan tempts Eve and is offered to be as “gods.” **“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and YE SHALL BE AS gods, knowing good and EVIL”** (Gen. 3:5).

Notice that these gods are fallen sons of God because of EVIL. Evil is from the “D”evil and because of God’s judgment upon him and the sons of God. Evil is already in existence BEFORE God’s “re-creative” week. We will study the word “Replenish” in 1:28 and the added revelation of that word throughout the word of God also.

The sons of God  
A pre-Adamic race

Although we touched on this subject from time to time throughout this book we still need to look at this more in detail.

There was a race called **“the sons of God”** who were most certainly around before Adam, for they sang and shouted when **“the foundations of the earth”** were laid (Job 38:4, 7). That is Genesis 1:1. Their head was called the **“son of the morning”** (Isa. 14:12). Positionally, he was the cherub that covered God’s throne (Ezek. 28:14).

Although these **“sons of God”** are spiritual beings, they can, and do take on physical bodies like men. These bodies are susceptible to physical death when judged by God. In Psalm 82:6 we read

**“Ye are gods; and all of you are CHILDREN of the most High.  
But ye shall die LIKE MEN, and fall like one of the princes.”**

Time period in which the sons of God fell and first become “gods”  
And the Foundations of the Earth

Lucifer did rebel against God, and a number of the sons of God joined him in the rebellion. The time period in which they fell is revealed also in Psalm 82 at verse 5. Now watch it very carefully, “They know not, neither will they understand; they walk on in darkness: all the foundations of the earth are out of course.” This verse alone has a GAP in it. The semicolon actually divides Noah’s Flood (which is mentioned first) from Lucifer’s Flood. Chronologically, of course Lucifer’s Flood took place first, then over 1,500 years later Noah’s Flood. But what many interpreters of the Bible cannot figure out

is that the Holy Spirit often takes the liberty to write later events first and former events second.

The Psalmist, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit did exactly that in Psalm 89:22-45. The Second Advent was mentioned first and the First Advent second.

Now to understand that the “gods” were already present BEFORE Adam and Eve fell, and to get the proper interpretation of the time period in which the “sons of God” fell let’s take a look at our text at hand, (Psalm 82:5). Remember, we must follow God’s instructions (1 Cor. 2:13) and compare “spiritual things with spiritual” to clear things up that our modern “creations” have muddled.

The first key (Luke 11:52) that unlocks the revelation here in Psalm 82:5 is noticing the “darkness.” Now go back to Genesis 1:2 and notice the First Mention of that word, “and darkness was upon the face of the deep...” Now you’ve made the proper connection. “... the scripture cannot be broken” (Jn. 10:35).

The second key of revelation is the phrase “the foundations of the earth...” That phrase is mentioned 10 times throughout the scripture AND NOT ONE TIME IS THAT PHRASE EVER CONNECTED WITH NOAH’S FLOOD.

Psalm 82:5 reads, “all the foundations of the earth ARE OUT OF COURSE.” Did you get that? The question is WHEN WERE ALL THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH OUT OF COURSE? Well, bless my soul, if you were to think that took place at Noah’s flood or at the time of Adam’s fall, you just “blew it.”

Adam wasn’t even created.

The DARKNESS in Psalm 82:5 is connected with THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH and the DESTRUCTION of God’s creation in Genesis 1:2.

The “sons of God” that “shouted for joy” are also connected with “THE FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH”

These sons of God are ALREADY CALLED “GODS” BEFORE ADAM AND EVER FELL, “...ye SHALL BE as gods, knowing good and evil. They didn’t become as the fallen sons of God until they disobeyed and took of the grape tree.

Chronologically, the sons of God first appear in Job 38:4. Now notice also they are connected with THE CREATION (Gen. 1:1) and not with Noah’s flood nor with Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve do not appear until after a FLOOD. We will list the events chronologically.

1. Creation – “Where wast thou when I laid the FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH? declare, if thou hast understanding... Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? or who laid the corner stone thereof;

When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy? (Job 38:4-7).

2. Lucifer's Flood – Genesis 1:2 “And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”

i. Further revelation of that flood – “they walk on in DARKNESS: all the FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH are out of course” (Psa. 82:5).

The word “darkness” or “dark” is never mentioned during Noah's flood. Get your concordance and look for yourself. To think that “darkness” was simply a part of God's creation in the sense that there was no JUDGMENT INVOLVED BECAUSE OF SIN is to approach NEGATIVE truth like your modern, positive thinkers, “Yea, hath God said” and to pervert the living words of the Living God and to annul the DIFFERENCES which 2 Timothy 2:15 teaches.

Unfortunately Hovind is WRONG and the Holy Bible is RIGHT. He smoothes over the negative truth in the second verse of the entire Bible, overlooking the FACT that the number 2 in the Bible is basically the number of DIVISION. Brother Kent didn't take 2 Timothy 2:15 literally and didn't apply it to the SECOND (number of division) verse of the entire Bible. As a teacher of Algebra, Hovind should pay a little closer attention to the doctrine of Numerology in the Bible. Every time he begins reading his Bible he'll have to REJECT revelation as it is laid out SCRIPTURE WITH SCRIPTURE AS WE JUST SHOWED ABOVE CONCERNING JOB 38:4-7, GENESIS 1:2 and PSALM 82:5. They all “tie in” and form a tremendous chain link of revelation that can only be “BROKEN” by rejecting light.

In judging this rebellion, the sons of God were cast out of the third heaven. That was the spiritual judgment upon them. God covered the heavens (plural) and the entire earth with a flood. God, by His righteousness had to “spoil” by a flood everything Lucifer had dominion over, just like God had to spoil His creation (concerning the earth) [note the difference] that Noah had dominion over. But unlike their counterparts in Genesis 6, the Lord did not confine them (the sons of God that were present during Adam's time), then, to “**everlasting chains under darkness unto judgment of the great day**” (Jude 6). Instead, God would allow them to dwell in the heavens of Genesis 1:6-8 (cf. Eph. 2:2; 6:12). As we have pointed out before that God did not say “**it was good**” on the second day of the re-creation, although He did say “**it was good**” in verses 4, 10, 12, 18, 21, 25, 31.

The phrase “**sons of God**” is mentioned 11 times in the entire Bible. In the Old Testament they refer to those fallen angels (not human beings) that rebelled with Lucifer. They are the “**gods**” that the Bible speaks of in other places starting in Genesis 3:5. The god's came down after their rebellion. It is these gods that were around during Noah's time (Gen. 6:2, 4). They are the ones with Satan that accused Job to God to see if he would still trust in God despite all the calamity that was to try him (Job 1:6; 2:1).

These sons of God are mentioned of before their fallen state in Job 38:7.

**“Where wast thou when I laid the FOUNDATIONS OF THE EARTH? Declare, if thou hast understanding.**

**Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? Or who hath stretched the line upon it?**

**Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof;**

**WHEN the MORNING STARS SANG TOGETHER, and ALL THE SONS OF GOD SHOUTED for joy?**

Chronologically speaking the “sons of God” were already existing before God **“laid the foundations of the earth”** (Gen. 1:1). When God laid the corner stone, the first stone the **“morning stars sang together, and all the sons of god shouted for joy.”**

The spiritual world already existed before the physical universe was spoken into existence.

In the New Testament something changed. The sons of God now (Church Age) are people (not angels) that are saved in the Church Age (John 1:12; 8:14, 19; Phil. 2:15; 1 John 3:1, 2). When they get their new bodies they will be then considered as angels.

The word **“god(s)”** is used 244 times in the entire Bible. Let’s allow the Holy Bible to determine the definition and characteristics of these “gods.”

**“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil”** (Gen. 3:5).

1. The first observation we should make about this verse is that when Satan spoke to Eve and said **“your eyes shall be opened, [that happened (v. 7)] and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil”** [that happened (v.22)] Satan meant that they, the gods were ALREADY PRESENT in their fallen state. Look at the verses as they are laid out in Holy Writ (Gen. 31:30, 32; 35:2, 4; Exod. 12:12; 15:11; 18:11; 20:3, 23, etc.

**THERE IS NOT ONE EXCEPTION TO THE RULE CONCERNING THE FACT THAT EVERY TIME THE WORD “gods” IS MENTIONED IT MEANS THEY ALREADY EXIST.**

2. The second observation that we should make about Genesis 3:5 is that here is revelation about gods that already knew good and evil. That is they had already FALLEN. Adam and Eve did not know evil until they SINNED; Eve first, then Adam. And so it was with the “sons of God” who had already fallen before Adam and Eve were created.

By now it should be quite obvious to you that sin existed well before Adam and Eve were created for when God said, **“ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil”** these gods’ ALREADY EXISTED ACCORDING TO HOLY WRIT, and not some dumb opinion about the matter. We gave you a list of over 9 verses to prove that. That is addition revelation in the Bible to shed light on that event in Genesis 3:5.



**“And ye shall overthrow their altars, and break their pillars, and burn their groves with fire; and ye shall hew down the graven images of their gods, and destroy the names of them out of that place”** (Deut. 12:3).

Here we find that there were graven images made that represent the gods that people worshipped.

**“And I will surely hide my face in that day for all the evils which they shall have wrought, in that they are turned unto other gods”** (Deut. 31:18).

Notice how that “EVIL” and “gods” are coupled together.

**“They sacrificed unto DEVILS, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not”** (Deut. 32:17).

Notice that devils are connected with “gods.” Here is some more advanced revelation by the King James Bible showing the “gods” in italics. The word is not in the “original” Hebrew. That is what drives the apostates crazy.

Just as God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ is a spirit (John 4:24) that manifest Himself to man and came in the flesh (John 1:1-3, 14) so also there is a god, who is now invisible to us but will manifest himself to the world during the Tribulation. There are also principalities, powers and unclean spirits that manifest themselves and will manifest themselves in the Tribulation. They were visible to people on this earth. But well before that they were present to Adam and Eve. **“For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil”** (Gen. 3:5). They both took of the fruit. Result – they became AS GODS that were already present, according to who? According to all the revelation in any and all verses throughout the Bible where the word “gods” is mentioned.

The “god” that spoke to Eve is **“the god of this world,”** which was the fallen **“cherub”** of (Ezek. 28), the **“son of the morning”** (Isa. 14:12, 13) who had already fallen. His partners were the **“sons of God”** (Job 38:4-7). They were already PRESENT.

**“In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them”** (2 Cor. 4:4).

**“God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the gods. I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes”** (Psalm 82:1, 6, 7).

The gods appear like men. They were present during Adam’s time **“ye shall be as gods...”** They were present during Noah’s time. They die like men and fall like men. They sin; men sin. They are judged just like men are judged. God made hell for the devil and his angels. That is where men will go, to hell, where fallen angels are and will be. **“Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken”** (John 10:34, 35).

These gods appear as men, walk as men, talk as men and sin as men. And many times men are mistaken as gods such as was the case when Paul and Barnabas preached. But the fact remains these “gods” come down from heaven to visit people. People accept them as if they are creatures of peace.

Acts 14:11-13 **And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.**

**And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.**

**Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.**

Notice that these sons of God are also mentioned as the sons of the mighty” (Psa. 89:6) and are undoubtedly the “gods” of Psalm 82:1 (KJV). There are the angels of 2 Peter 2 and Jude 6, 7. They are thirty-three-year old males, without wings, and can cohabit with women and reproduce.

The god of this world is the devil, Satan, the serpent that shows up in Genesis 3. He was the “**cherub that covereth**” (Ezek. 28:14). He was obviously created along with the sons of God before Genesis 1:1 before time starts “**in the beginning**” (Gen. 1:1) because Job 38:4-7 says before God laid the foundation the sons of God were singing and rejoiced. The god of this world, Satan is connected with these sons of God “**Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan came also among them**” (Job 1:6). See also 2:1.

Since he sinned he was cast out of the third heaven and no longer has access to it. He and the fallen sons of God were confined to the second heaven. Others later fell during Noah’s time and many of those were thrown down to hell.

His sin led him to be Lucifer, son of the morning Isa. 14:12 he was lifted up in pride by wanting to be like the most high God. That is what he tempted Eve with “**ye shall be as gods.**” (Gen. 3:5) He now has access to the first heaven as his sphere of dominion and called “**the god of this world**” (2 Cor. 4:4) to accuse the brethren.

### Different periods of the sons of God

Here we’ll give a simple outline of the history of the sons of God.

Chronologically speaking Job 38:4-7 the “**sons of God**” were already present before Genesis 1:1, before “**the world that then was...**” (2 Pet. 3:6). To refute that shows an inability to read.

Genesis 1:3 starts a re-creation, **“But the heavens and the earth, which are now...”** (2 Pet. 3:7).

A. Genesis 1:6-8 proves that there was a judgment upon a fallen heavenly host because **“and it was good”** is missing on the second day of the six creative days.

B. This also proves that these sons of God were around before Noah’s flood and after, **“after that”** (Gen. 6:4). This also proves that even through these sons of God are judged that does not mean that they no longer exist. They have lost not only a considerable amount of liberty, which they once had but they are also confined to only the second and first heavens. The fallen **“sons of God”** are the **“gods”** that are mentioned of in Genesis 3:5 of Genesis. They are already present before Eve and Adam fell.

Adam is created (Gen. 1:28; 2:7). Adam was “the son of God,” **“Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was THE SON OF GOD.** (Luke 3:38).

Adam was created and **“the son of God”** with the purpose to **“replenish the earth”** since the previous **“sons of God”** already fell. God had to start over again to fulfill that which He first intended.

Here we will quote Dr. Sam Gipp’s comment on John 1:12,

“This verse is the spiritual “title deed” to the world. A “title deed” for a piece of property is a record of ownership that clears the property of any liens or uncleared transactions all the way back to the original owner. That is exactly what the function of John 1:12 is on our behalf.

The world has always been the **exclusive property of “the sons of God.”** But just who those sons of God are has changed several times over the course of history since the creation.

The original owners of this planet were “the sons of God.” Job 38:7 states; **“When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?”** When the earth was first created in Genesis 1:1 it was the exclusive property of Lucifer (Isa. 14) and his angelic followers, the sons of God. We don’t know how long they were here. It may have been 1000 years but was surely not “millions and millions” of years. When Lucifer attempted his take over of Heaven as recorded in Isaiah 14:12-14, he was removed from his position as “The Cover Cherub” (Ezek. 28:13-19) he was removed from his office, the earth was destroyed (Jer. 4:23 and Gen. 1:2) and Hell was created for him and his fallen sons of God. Due to the wrath of God, the earth was “without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep” (Gen. 1:2, Jer. 4:23).

Starting in Genesis 1:2 God restored the earth and set about it re-inhabit it. After this restoration of the earth, God turned it over to a new owner; Adam. He was told; **“...Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”** (Gen. 1:28) He was the **owner!** To qualify as the owner of the earth he had to be a “son of God.” That he was indeed the “son of God” is recorded in Luke

3:38 which ends with the words; **“...Adam, which was the son of God.”** Adam was made “in the image of God” and Jesus Christ is “the image of God.” (Heb. 1:1-3)

Unfortunately, with the help of the jealous previous owner, Adam never made it through chapter three without “dropping the ball” and once again the earth is cursed and its ownership is “up for grabs.” When Adam sinned he ceased to be the “son of God” and instead became a spiritual “son of the devil.” (John 8:44) We can only imagine the devil gloating over this seeming victory over God.

Once again God chose one man out of the human race to be the owner of the earth; Abraham. He was given the ownership of the earth. (Gen. 12:1-3) That ownership was transferred through Isaac (Gen. 17:21) to Jacob (Gen. 28:1-4). Who is Jacob? Israel. Who is Israel? The answer is found in Hosea 1:10 which says: “Yet the number of the children of Israel shall be as the sand of the sea, which cannot be measured nor numbered; and it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there it shall be said unto them, **Ye are the sons of the living God.**”

Since the earth is the inheritance of the Jews it is essential that the devil attack their seed. This is why God forbade interracial marriages with the inhabitants of the land of Canaan. (Deut. 7:1-3) He wanted to keep Israel’s **seed** pure from corruption. But their seed was corrupted before they even got into the promised land due to the advice of Balaam. (Num. 25:1-3)

Next, according to Matthew 21:37, God sent His **“only begotten”** Son to take possession of the earth. According to Matthew 21:38, 39 he was murdered by the caretakers in hopes that they would be able to claim that ownership. Jesus Christ could lay claim to the earth because He was the **Son of God**. After this God did something different. He gave anyone who would receive His only begotten Son as their personal Saviour **“the power to become the sons of God.”** That is why we Christians will reign with Him. That is also why we bear the wrath of the devil and his unclean spirits. **We got what had been their property!** That’s why they hate us.

That is also why we are told to go to all nations and preach the gospel. (Mat. 28:19) We are to “cultivate” the whole vineyard and in the process reproduce more “sons of God” through the salvation offered by the gospel. What happens next?

According to prophecy, Israel will be restored. (Deut. 30:3-6; Jer. 30:11; Zech. 8:23; Heb. 8:10-12 are just a few.) That means Israel, **“the son of God,”** and we Christians, **“the sons of God”** will reign with Jesus Christ, the Son of God on OUR earth, in the future. (Zech. 8:20-23; Rev. 20:1-5; 2 Peter 1:11)

This explains why the devil’s disciples, from Nero to the popes to Adolf Hitler, have been so obsessed with the destruction of both Jews and Christians. The devil wants us dead so he can reclaim his former property.

The devil’s attack is not aimed only at the physical “sons of God.” He also wants to keep anyone from finding out that they can have a part in the inheritance of the earth. Imagine that, unbeknownst to you, you had a rich

uncle die and leave you a vast fortune in riches and property. But his wicked servants conspired to prevent you from finding out about your intended inheritance. **They** would have sole control over the property. That is exactly what the devil attempts to do with modern bible translations. He alters the text so that you will be ignorant of your ownership of the earth. That's why he eliminates the title "sons of God" from all of the new versions." "No one seems to like the idea that all Christians are the sons of God. Or at least, no one who works for the devil likes it.

Only the King James Bible correctly translated the passage by saying **"sons of God."** Getting rid of your King James Bible is like throwing away the only document that assures you of a grand inheritance." (The Gospel of John pgs. 13-17).

## Chapter 12 "Replenish"

The word "replenish" is another stumbling block of the "anti-gap" theorists. **"And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth"** (Gen. 1:28).

One of the arguments presented by many of the Fundamentalists is that replenish means only to "fill." They prove this by using a dictionary, for their final authority for a definition of terms. Brother Hovind points out that dictionaries before Darwin say "fill" and dictionaries after Darwin add the definition "refill." This author agrees to that. But we still cannot deny what the Bible says in the context of Genesis 1:28. Just 6 verses previous to that the King James translators used the word "fill" (v.26). **"And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth."**

Here, in this verse, God, by his word gave power to the creatures of the seas and fowl of the air to reproduce after their own kind. It is a filling, a first time event. Jeremiah 4:23 is talking about things that were already on the earth; civilization, animals, etc. But nonetheless that judgment of Jeremiah 4:23, although it is a *future* event is the key for Genesis 1:2. *Judgment* is the reason for the earth becoming without form and void.

Now concerning what God said *to man*, we've got something else, **"And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and REPLENISH the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth"** (Gen. 1:28).

**"And God blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth"** (Gen. 9:1).

Unfortunately our brethren have taken a CATHOLIC position by using a dual authority along with the Bible for their interpretation. Tabb is now forced to go to a DICTIONARY to “prove” the word “replenish.” He says, -

“God told Noah the same thing (Gen. 9). Gap theorists go to some length comparing those two passages to show that Adam was to refill an earth that had been emptied by judgment because Noah was to refill an earth that had been emptied by judgment. That is a good argument but it overlooks the multi – meanings of English”

Some English words have twenty-five or thirty different definitions. Sometimes, if we do not resort to a dictionary, we will not know what a given word means in a particular context. The dictionary can be a true friend to a Bible student. Some words actually have opposite definitions (e.g., the word “let” can mean to allow or to hinder, depending on its context; “prevent” can mean to go before or to stop).

If gap theorists would go to the dictionary, they would find they have no valid argument, for replenish is a word with multi-definitions. We shall quote directly from Webster’s Seventy New Collegiate Dictionary.

Replenish vb [ME replenisshen, fr. MF repleniss-, stem of replenir to fill...more at FULL] vt 1 **a:** to fill with persons or animals: STOCK **b** archaic: to supply fully: PERFECT **c:** to fill with a source of inspiration power: NOURISH 2 **a:** to fill or build up again **b.** to make good: REPLACE vi: to become full: fill up again”

Now if we were to play the kind of game Tabb is suggesting for a ‘final authority,’ then let’s go to another dictionary to find out what man says about this word “replenish.” Let’s brake the word down first by taking the prefix “re”

“1. back [repay, restore] 2. AGAIN, ANEW, OVER AGAIN, [reappear, retell] It is used with a hyphen: 1) to distinguish between a word in which the prefix means simply AGAIN or ANEW...” (WEBSTERS’S NEW WORLD DICTIONARY, David B. Guralnik, Second Edition, p. 1181)

Now let’s take the word “plenish” from the same dictionary –

“to fill...to fill up; furnish; stock”

Now let’s take the word “REPLENISH” –

“1. to make full or complete AGAIN, as by furnishing a new supply [to replenish a stock of goods] 2. to supply AGAIN with fuel or the like”

Of course Hovind says that with the process of time dictionaries change their meanings to conform to the evolutionistic theories of the 19<sup>th</sup> Century. But we are not to

forget that the *infallible* dictionary is the Bible that explains its own terms. Then and only then can we come to the proper interpretation of a word that is in the Bible when we COMPARE SCRIPTURE WITH SCRIPTURE, which Hovind refuses to do when he explains the dictionary meaning of the Bible. You see what he does? At this point he used an OUTSIDE authority to prove WHAT GOD SAID. He doesn't want you to go to other places where the Holy Spirit Himself wrote additional revelation to explain His own terms. Hovind's position is 'Catholic' (dual authorities) at this point.

But away with the dictionaries and make way for THE dictionary, the Holy Bible. **"Let God be true and every man a liar"** (Rom. 3:4). Genesis 9:1 is for Noah to replenish the earth because of a previous flood. That is history repeating itself.

Tabb and Kent Hovind try to prove that the word "replenish" CAN ONLY mean to "fill." It can mean REFILL according to the Bible first. Secondly according to the construction of the word itself. It CAN mean fill AGAIN by the prefix 'RE.' To deny that is to deny basic English word construction.

If we were to play Hovind's or Tabb's game we could very easily make reference to the Hebrew definition of "replenish," although a Hebrew-Chaldean lexicon, tells you the word means "fill." But look at the following –

"Here, the Hebrew texts all read "male". It is translated as **"replenish"** in Genesis 1:28 and 9:1 [KJV]. The same word is translated as **"replenish"** in Jeremiah 31:25; Isaiah 2:6, 23:2; and Ezekiel 26:2; 27:25. In all five cases it was a restoration of a previous condition: "it was rich and then poor," "it got joy back that it had lost," "it had done it before," and "someone is being REFILLED after being empty." As far back as 1821, Bacon said "replenish" meant "to recover former fullness." Poor Gary [of whom Dr. Ruckman was talking about] was going to try to prove that "originally" the word "replenish," in English was not to "redo" anything. He was going to prove this with Webster's Student Dictionary (G.C. Merriman and Co., 1960, p. 695) which says, "To stock, to supply fully, to fill again ESPECIALLY AFTER HAVING BEEN EMPTIED." Webster (p. 313) said it came from the Latin compound "re" plus "plenus." The "re" meant "again" and the "plenus" meant "to get full".

Here, where the AV text gave an advanced revelation not found in the Hebrew lexicon (!!), all the Cult members simply went to pieces. You can see why."

(King James Onlyism vs. Scholarship Onlyism, Dr. Peter S. Ruckman, p. 63).

You see, when it comes to matters of final authority each person can choose his own authority; let's say a dictionary that agrees with his theory. But what happens if you find another authority that says something different from which you believe? Then you choose which authority YOU want to be the final authority. Then the question arises, If there are two conflicting authorities (two different dictionaries) who then decides which dictionary is the final authority? ANSWER: The person who did the choosing. Then HE HIMSELF BECOMES THE FINAL AUTHORITY over the two conflicting authorities. That is

Tabb and Hovind concerning this matter of “replenish.” They dropped the Book to prove their point and turned to a conflicting authority to prove their own authority.

Where dictionaries line up with the King James Bible we’ll use them; where they don’t, we simply disregard them. Sooner or later every man, every dictionary on top side of this earth will have to ‘bend its knee’ to the living words of the Living God who wrote a living dictionary, THE BIBLE. And woe be to that man who uses a “dual” authority to usurp the authority of holy writ – the Bible. That is an anti-Biblical and a PRO-ROMAN CATHOLIC POSITION. **“A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump”** (Gal. 5:9). The seeds of apostasy are among Baptist Fundamentalists who use the King James Bible and profess to believe the King James Bible but will pervert the interpretation of the scriptures by using an outside source along side the scriptures. Then that outside source becomes their final authority where the Holy Bible “crosses” their personal belief or convictions. That is HERESY! That is holding the truth in unrighteousness.

A simple comparison of verses where the word is written BY THE HOLY SPIRIT HIMSELF will show you what the word means –

**“Therefore thou hast forsaken thy people the house of Jacob, because they be replenished from the east, and *are* soothsayers like the Philistines, and they please themselves in the children of strangers”** (Isaiah 2:6)

This is a prophecy of Israel and **“the day of the Lord”** (v. 12). It is an event that is yet future. Israel AGAIN will be in apostasy. But she will in the end be finally restored AGAIN. She was in apostasy the first time but was **RE**stored under Ezra and Nehemiah. Now for about 2,000 years Israel has been scattered but Israel will **RE**turn to their homeland AGAIN. So “replenish” means AGAIN in this verse.

**“Be still, ye inhabitants of the isle; thou whom the merchants of Zidon, that pass over the sea, have replenished”** (Isaiah 23:2).

Zidon was a very ancient city of Phoenicia, more ancient than Tyre; for Tyre was a colony of the Zidonians, and built by them, and so might be said to be replenished by them with men from the first, as it also was with mariners. Look at Ezekiel 27:8.

You see, the REplenish is a REpeat of what previously happened.

Let’s go to the next time “replenished” is used in the Bible, so that the Bible can interpret itself –

**“For I have satiated the weary soul, and I have replenished every sorrowful soul”** (Jeremiah 31:25)

Notice the word “AND” here in this verse. First Isaiah says that the weary soul will be satiated, and **“I have REplenished every sorrowful soul.”**

This verse shows that the sorrowful soul means it was depleted of something to become sorrowful. But **RE**plenishment comes to that soul to **RE**fresh it.

**“Son of man, because that Tyrus hath said against Jerusalem, Aha, she is broken *that was* the gates of the people: she is turned unto me: I shall be replenished, *now* she is laid waste”** (Ezekiel 26:2).



This verse states that Tyrus would be replenished. Here it means to be filled. But that does not mean that at one time Tyrus was not previously filled. So, still REplenish means to repeat something. See Isaiah 23:8

**“Who hath taken this counsel against Tyre, the crowning city, whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth?”**

The last time REplenish is used in the Bible is at Ezekiel 27:25 **“The ships of Tarshish did sing of thee in thy market: and thou wast replenished, and made very glorious in the midst of the seas.”**

Again, the word here could mean to be filled, but that does NOT neglect the fact that Tyre at one time was “filled” as some would have it, but a repetition of that would be a REplenishment.

Finally, concerning the word **“replenish”** one cannot possibly reject the comparison of Noah’s flood and that of Lucifer’s when you are faced with the following factual, Biblical parallels –

1. Both Adam and Noah were given dominion by a commission from God after judgment fell.
2. They both were sole possessors of the earth.
3. They both replaced races which God did not want controlling the earth.
4. Both had three sons that are named in the Bible.
5. Both were naked when they sinned in a garden.
6. Both Adam and Noah partook of forbidden fruit, by taking it orally.
7. Both had one son in the lineage of the Messiah.
8. Both had one son that was connected with a curse and a type of Antichrist.
9. Both had a world-wide flood that drowned a population of sons of God preceding their dominion (Gen. 1:2; 6:1-7; Job 1:6; 2:1; 38:4-13; Ezek. 26-28).
10. Both were commanded to **“replenish”** the earth’s population.

Here is a chart showing parallels between Adam and Noah with some additional information –

1. Adam was placed on earth after a judgment on wickedness by a flood.	1. Noah started over, after a judgment on wickedness by a flood.
2. Adam was made Lord of the creation. (Gen. 1:28)	2. Noah was made lord over all the beast. (Gen. 9:2)
3. Adam was blessed and told to “be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth”. (Gen 1:28)	3. Noah was blessed and told to “be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth”. (Gen. 9:1)
4. Adam was placed in a garden to “dress	4. Noah began to be a husbandman and

and keep it. (Gen. 2:15)	planted a vineyard. (Gen. 9:20)
5. The product of the garden was the reason Adam fell, Vine tree – grapes, (Gen. 3:6)	5. The product of Noah’s garden was why he had trouble. Grape vine – wine, (Gen. 9:21)
6. Adam’s nakedness was covered by someone else, God. (Gen. 3:21)	6. Noah’s nakedness was covered by someone else, his sons. (Gen. 9:23)
7. Adam’s sin brought a curse on his seed. (Rom. 5:12)	7. Noah’s sin brought a curse on his seed. (Gen. 9:25d)
8. Adam had three named sons, Cain, Abel and Seth. (Gen. 4:1,2; 5:3)	8. Noah had three named sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. (Gen. 5:32)
9. After Adam’s fall, a prophecy was given. (Gen. 3:15)	9. After Noah’s fall, a prophecy of three races was given. (Gen. 9:25-27)
10. The line of Christ came through Seth and his name starts with a “S”.	10. Line of Christ came through Shem and his name starts with an “S”.

Now these are FACTS! Therefore the word “**replenish**” as it stands, and given as a command to Adam and to Noah parallel each other reveals the *SUPERIORITY* of the Authorized Version of the King James Bible over “the originals” or man’s dictionaries. Just as man may list a number of definitions for a particular word in his own dictionary, God, within His own dictionary, the Bible, defines His own terms by the dictations of context, (Isa. 28:9-13) *repetition*, (Isa. 28:9-13; I Cor. 2:13; 2 Pet. 3:5-13), *division* (2 Tim. 2:15) *factual events*, *history* and *prophecy* (Ecc. 1:9). “Replenish” here then means to recover former fullness. There needs no further explanation. The problem with folks like Hovind, Tabb, Ham, etc., is “belief.” To reject this revelation is to miss one of the greatest blessings concerning the revelation of the scriptures. Besides, they do not present this when they try to discuss this word “replenish.” They will not show their viewers what the Book says about the Book. It is a hiding of the truth, the sin of OMISSION!

**“For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God”** (Acts 20:27).

But we’re not through yet with the word “replenish.” With all of the above evidence concerning this particular subject, there is only one reason why Satan would use conservative scholarship to change the word “replenish” to “fill” in many new versions of the Bible. We are not ignorant of the devil’s devices when it comes to covering up his own tracts. The “**Yea, hath God said**” Society is showing its colors by changing the

wording from “replenish” to “fill” so that you would lose the cross-reference of the word and lose out on more revelation and light. **“...and the scripture cannot be broken...”**

Yes, Lucifer means “light-bearer.” His light is to enlighten people to darkness, little by little, whereas the light of the Holy Bible, KJV 1611 sheds more light on conservative scholarship and their trickery, and perversion than they understand, **“And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? (John 9:40).**

### **Chapter 13** **More Differences (2 Tim. 2:15)**

#### **“heaven” and “heavens”**

In Genesis 1:1 notice the word **“heaven”** (singular). **“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.”**

In Genesis 2:1 you read **“heavens”** (plural), meaning there is more than just one heaven. **“Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them.”** Why did the Holy Spirit write “heaven” in one place and “heavens” in another concerning creation? Because as we have seen already there are verses throughout the Bible that give you revelation to a recreation act after Genesis 1:2. We have not yet exhausted all the verses throughout the Bible to further explain the Gap FACT. But let’s continue by observing Psalm 104:30, which reads, **“Thou sendest forth thy spirit, they are created: and thou RENEWEST the face of the earth.”**

Notice a renewing of the face of the earth. This is a reference to two renewals, both of them occurring after a flood. The first of these is in Genesis 1:2-3, and the second took place in Genesis 8 and 9. But we still haven’t answered completely why the difference between “heaven” and “heavens.”

Those that believe in the theory that there was no gap say the Genesis 1:1 was a statement of fact while Genesis 2:1 is a summary of the short statement in 1:1 tying both chapters together as one event thus rejecting any DIVISION between Genesis 1:2 of a judgment and a RENEWAL (Psal. 104:30) or re-creation in Genesis 1:3-31.

The fact of the matter is Genesis 1:3-31 is simply an explanation of the Holy Spirit moving upon the **“face of the deep”** (Job 38:30) and a **“[RENEWAL] of “the face of the earth”** (Psal. 104:30).

Genesis 1:3-31 is simply an explanation of how God divided (Gen. 1:4, 7) the heaven (singular) into heavens (plural) as a result of sin and JUDGMENT, plus the six, 24-hour days of a literal creation. Period!

#### **“Generations”**

The following material is taken from “The Bible Genesis and Geology”  
<http://www.kjvbible.org/>

“It is quite interesting to know that the word “generations” is written in the plural.

**“These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens, And every plant of the field before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew: for the LORD God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground.” (Gen. 2:4-5)**

2<sup>nd</sup> Mention: **“This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created. And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begat [a son] in his own likeness, after his image; and called his name Seth:” (Gen. 5:1-3)**

Notice that the second mention in the Bible of the term “generations” chronicles the family line of Adam. However, this verse begins the start of Adam’s family line with Seth and *NOT* with Cain or Abel. This is extremely instructive, as anyone who reads the Bible knows that Eve gave birth to Cain and Abel BEFORE Seth. So why does this particular verse of Scripture and genealogy of Adam deliberately skip over Cain and Abel? Because there is a GAP between Adam’s generation and Seth’s. Let’s look at the Bible for the answer.

**“And Adam knew his wife again; and she bare a son, and called his name Seth: For God, *said she*, hath appointed me another seed instead of Abel, whom Cain slew.” (Gen. 4:25)**

This prior verse says that Seth was a replacement for the first seed (Abel), who was destroyed by the evil deed of his brother (Cain), but neither the one replaced nor his brother are mentioned in the genealogy of Genesis 5:1-3. The Holy Spirit purposely did that to skip over them. There is a “GAP” in the “generations of Adam” from that point forward in time. Applying the “Rule of First Mention” to the first mention of the word generations in Genesis 2:1 (aided with the additional insight gained in observing the word’s use in the second mention at Genesis 5:1-4), we can be confident there must also be a “GAP” at the first mention.

In other words, the “generations” of the “heavens and of the earth” beginning at Genesis 2:4 are also a replacement for a previous “heaven” and earth which were eventually destroyed as a consequence of Lucifer’s rebellion before verse 3 of chapter 1 of Genesis. In order for this interpretation to be true and the “Rule of First Mention” to remain valid, every use of the word “generations” in the Bible (all 114 references) must refer to a starting point in time which skips over a previous generation or generations.

So that is what the Bible teaches about the **“GAP FACT”** the name of this book. There is no such thing as a gap “theory” as Hovind would have you believe.

Let’s continue [“searching] **the scriptures**” (John 5:39) **“comparing”** (1 Cor. 2:13) **“here a little, and their a little”** (Isa. 28:10) for further revelation. Stay with us and don’t fall back (Isa. 28:13).

The third mention of “generations” begins with Noah:

**“These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God” (Gen. 6:9).**

Noah was the beginning of a new generation, because he was the father of EVERY descendant who survived the flood. The destruction of the old world by the flood was a new “starting point” for reckoning the “generations,” as all before him from Adam to Lamech are *skipped over* in that verse. You will observe that every reference to “generations” which follows in the Bible sets a specific point of reference in historical time, which always runs forward, never backwards.”

Let’s apply some basic logic, common sense, the English grammar, and basic science to the issue. In Genesis 1:2 before God said, “let there be light,” it is apparent several things are *already there*; first of all the earth, waters, the “deep,” and darkness, let alone **“the earth was without form and void...”** These four things already exist on the first day, so light was not the first thing God created. The first thing God created was the **“heaven and the earth”** (Genesis 1:1). Genesis 1:2 describes the CONDITION of the earth at a point in time AFTER the “heaven and earth” were first created. Verse 2 means DIVISION. Genesis 1:3 is the beginning of a six-day restoration process. More precisely, it was the divine work of making a new GENERATION (singular) of the “heavens and earth”: **These are the generations (plural) of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens,**” (Genesis 2:4).

Generation means *beginnings* and *successions*

To further explain this all-important word “**generation(s)**” let’s take the concordance again and allow God Himself to explain what He wrote. It’s so simple if we follow instructions (1 Cor. 2:13). As you will see, there is not one verse in the entire Bible with the word “**generation(s)**” that is not only dealing with *beginnings* but also succession i.e., *different periods of time to follow*. Look at the verses – Gen. 7:1; 9:12; 10:1, 32; 11:10, 27; 15:16; 17:7, 9, 12; 25:12, 13, 19; 36:1, 9; 37:2, etc.

In short when dealing with a succession of generations the Bible also expresses that as in Exodus 17:16 **“For he said, Because the LORD hath sworn that the LORD will have war with Amalek from generation to generation.”**

The expression “**from generation to generation**” is mentioned 11 times throughout scripture. Check them out in your concordance. The word “**generation**” is dealing not only with beginnings but of succession of time.

Notice in the following verse that there are two generations (plural) mentioned separately –

**“Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;”** (Exod.20:5).

This verse shows that each generation is mentioned separately, **“unto the third and fourth generation”** which means **“generations”** (PLURAL) just as Genesis 2:4 says **“generations.”** That means we’re dealing with two separate beginnings for the heavens and two separate beginnings for the earth.

Notice something else concerning **“generations”** –  
**“Know therefore that the LORD thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations;”**

Notice the multiplicity of succession of generations with the preceding adjective **“to a thousand...”** That means that the word **“generations”** (plural) is self-explaining – a succession of times.

In Psalm 22:30, 31 we read, **“A seed shall serve him; it shall be accounted to the Lord for a generation.**

**They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that he hath done *this*.”**

It says here that **“a seed shall serve him”** (the Lord Jesus Christ, v. 30). **“It”** (the seed) shall be **“accounted to the Lord for a generation.”** The Lord is going to get credit for **“GENERATING”** that seed.

So here we find the beginnings of a generation. But that generation lasts for over 2000 years which is dealing with people that are **“born”** (v. 31). That has to do with those that are born-again (John 3:3, 7; 1 Pet. 1:23). **“They shall come, and shall declare his righteousness unto a people that shall be born, that he hath done *this*.”**

For over 2000 years (a succession of time) the seed has been coming and declaring his righteousness unto people that are being born again. This will continue until the Rapture.

One more time! Let’s look at the word **“generation”** with a prefix **“re”** added to it **“regeneration,”** –

**“And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel”** (Matthew 19:28)

This verse clearly explains that the earth will go through a transformation when Jesus Christ comes back to reign on this earth during the Millennium. The earth will be **“regenerated.”** If that weren’t enough, after the Millennium, the earth will go through a complete transformation when it is destroyed, burned and there will be a new earth along with the new heavens.

The meaning of **“regeneration”** is found in the only one other place in the entire Bible where the word **“regeneration”** is mentioned – Titus 3:5. This is added, or supplementary revelation –

**“Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;”**

The word **“regeneration”** is explained by the next adverb **“renewing.”** At the moment of salvation for the New Testament believer, there is a renewing going on, a starting over again. Very simple!

So then, if there was only *one* creation of the heavens and one creation of the earth from Genesis 1:1-36, without the break, then Genesis 2:4 should have read, **“This is the generation of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.”**

But the text does NOT read that way. It reads **“These (plural) *are* (plural) the generations (plural) of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.”** That means there must have been something before that, implying a previous generation, a previous start, i.e., a previous start of the heavens and a previous start of the earth.

## Chapter 14 2 PETER 3

Now we’ve come to 2 Peter 3 to make comparison with it and chapter 2. Unfortunately the brethren are not “focused” and cannot see the differences between the different sets of “the heavens and the earth” (2 Pet. 3). As mentioned at the start of this book the non-gap proponents missed the opportunity to rightly divide the word of truth according to 2 Timothy 2:15. Therefore they missed the blessing.

Now this author has been taking it for granted that there was a **“heaven and the earth”** (Gen. 1:1) which is spoken of as **“the world that then was”** (2 Pet. 3:6); and that there is another set of heavens now, **“But the heavenS (plural) and the earth, which are now...”** (2 Peter 3:7). Notice the word **“but”** is contrast to that which **“was.”** And also the **“heavenS (plural) and the earth, which are now by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.”** Then there will be a new heavens, **“Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavenS (plural) and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness”** (2 Pet. 3:13).

In 2 Peter 3:4 we read the following,  
**“And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.”**

**“Where is the promise of his coming?”** In other words, “People have been preaching about His Coming for some time now but He hasn’t and will not come.” Scoffers doubt the return of the Lord Jesus Christ which rules out any DIVINE INTERVENTION and JUDGMENT. The scoffers are your communists and evolutionists. The original scoffer was the devil. Satan asked the question **“Yea, hath God said?”** (Gen. 3:1). He convinced Eve to make light of God’s severity. He convinced her to believe that God wouldn’t “step in” and judge HER sin. That’s the creationist “evolutionists.”

**“all things continue as they were”** That is a doctrine known as uniformitarianism. It is the basis for the theory of evolution. In other words things haven’t changed since the beginning of time; no “without form” no “void,” no “darkness...upon the face of the deep” because there was no sin, death, evil, and no judgment.

Unfortunately there are not only unsaved scoffers who don’t expect the Lord’s Return and any sort of judgment, but there are saved people who in part scoff at the witness given of a judgment in Genesis 1:2 and 2 Peter 3:4-6. Noah’s flood (2 Peter 2:4-5) is certainly not **“from the beginning of the creation.”** The brethren attempt to eliminate or make light of God’s severity of judging the **“heavens...of old”** (v. 5) and **“the world that then was...overflowed with water, perished”** (v. 6) is simply the devil trying to take away the word that was sown (Mark 4:15) or to get you to **“[hold] the truth in unrighteousness”** (Rom. 1:18). Don’t give him place! (Eph. 4:27).

The scoffers wanted to push their argument as far back as possible. So they referred to “the fathers,” that is, Old Testament patriarchs (Jn. 7:22, Acts 3:13; Rom. 9:5; Heb. 1:1), and also to **“the beginning of the creation”** (v. 4). Since nothing happened in all this time, scoffers reasoned why expect the Lord’s return now?

Peter met those arguments “head on” by dealing with something that happened **“FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE CREATION.”** Here’s his answer-

**“For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water”** (v. 5)

Now we’ve established the first difference,

1. We’re dealing with the context of the scoffer’s argument, **“FROM THE BEGINNING OF THE CREATION.”** You cannot honestly say that this is speaking of Noah’s flood for anybody knows that Noah’s flood had nothing to do with “from the beginning of the creation.” Noah’s flood took place some 1700 years AFTER the beginning. Cain’s civilization already existed by Genesis 4. Then listed in Genesis 5 are the generations of Adam (Gen. 5:1) which extends hundreds of years before Noah even began to build the ark in Genesis 6.

2. Note the “heavens” were of old. This couldn’t be Noah’s flood, because the HEAVENS (plural) of Noah’s flood most certainly DID NOT PERISH as 2 Peter 3:6 talks about. Read Genesis 6-8 or 2 Peter 2:4, 5 (Noah’s flood) and you will never find any thing of the kind about the “heavens” (plural) perishing.

3. The third difference is located in 2 Peter 3:5, **“and the earth standing out of the water and in the water, perished.”**

There is absolutely no reference to the earth **“standing out of the water and IN the water”** during Noah’s flood. Go back and read the account for yourself (Gen. 6-8). It’s not there. Verse 5 also has nothing to do with Genesis 1:9, for the waters were gathered together on the earth; the earth wasn’t **“IN”** them as 2 Peter 3:5. Also, Genesis 1:9 speaks of the re-creation days. It has nothing to do with what Peter is talking about. In Genesis 7:17 during Noah’s flood the waters were “upon the earth”; again, the earth was not IN them.

**6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished:** That was **“the world that was then”** of Gen. 1:1 drowned, it perished.



7 But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

To sum things up in this passage we have the following:

1.) The universal flood of verses 5 and 6 is a reference to Genesis 1:2, not Noah's Flood. Whoever wrote Psalm 104 SAW the difference between two different floods. See Psalm 104:6-9.

5 *Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever.*

6 Thou coveredst it with **the deep** as *with* a garment: the waters stood above the mountains.

7 At thy rebuke they fled; at the voice of thy thunder they hasted away.

8 They go up by the mountains; they go down by the valleys unto the place which thou hast founded for them.

9 Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; that they turn not again to cover the earth.

Notice that the context of the passage is when God "**laid the foundations of the earth.**" This clearly is a reference to the original creation of Genesis 1:1 (Job 38:4-7). The word "**foundations**" occurs nowhere in connection with Noah's Flood in Genesis 6-9.

Henry Morris and the Institute for Creation Research along with Kent Hovind have made this the Flood of Noah in an attempt to "protect" creationism against the theistic-evolutionists and explain the dinosaurs. The verse has nothing to do the Noah's Flood at all. The context of the passage is when God "**laid the foundations (plural) of the earth**" (v.5), WHICH IS CLEARLY A REFERENCE TO THE ORIGINAL CREATION OF GENESIS 1:1 (Job 38:4-7). You will not find the word "**foundations**" anywhere in connection with Noah's Flood in Genesis 6-9. Get a concordance and look for yourself instead of just believing what Hovind reproduces on his discs concerning creation and evolution. Hovind lied to you.

The first time the word "**foundations**" is mentioned in your Bible is in Deuteronomy 32:22 dealing with "**the foundations of the mountains**" and God's judgment. BUT chronologically speaking the first "**FOUNDATIONS**" (plural) is found in Job 38:4-6, right in the context of Job 38:7 "**When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?**" We begin right from the beginning of the original creation, WELL BEFORE NOAH'S FLOOD.

Since the Bible tells us to "**rightly [divide] the word of truth**" verses 7-9 in this same passage create a *GAP* by a period at the end of verse 6 and crosses over into Noah's flood in Psalm 104 verses 7 – 9. And verses 4-6 have to do with the flood of Genesis 1:1, 2.

Unfortunately the untrained eye (especially among your modern Fundamentalists; Morris, Hovind, Ham, etc.) will not see *that* division just like many post-millennialists cannot see the difference between the First and Second Comings of our Lord Jesus Christ that are separated by an approximate 2000-year GAP. Many also cannot see that there is a 1000 year GAP between the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ and the Great White Throne Judgment, that is, the first and second resurrections.

2.) **“heavens were of old, and the earth”** were of old, perished (v.6). Notice the added revelation concerning the heavens of heavens, **“WHICH WERE OF OLD...”** (Psa. 68:33 dealing with what was in Genesis 1:1 although Genesis 1:1 speaks of all the heavens as one “heaven” but in actuality there were more than one -

Psalm 68:33 **To him that rideth upon the heavens of heavens, WHICH WERE OF OLD; lo, he doth send out his voice, and that a mighty voice.**

**“When he uttereth his voice, there is a MULTITUDE OF WATERS IN THE HEAVENS, and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures”** (Jer. 10:13; 51:16).

When one takes a careful look at the matter in 2 Peter 3 you read **“from the beginning of the creation”** (v. 4) which is explained as **“the HEAVENS** (plural) **were of old, and the earth...”** of verse 5. That is the FIRST set of heavens (plural) and earth. Notice Peter goes on to tell of a SECOND set of heavens, **“the HEAVENS** (plural) **and the earth which are now...”** followed by the word **“BUT”** (v.7) which is in sharp CONTRAST (division 2 Tim. 2:15) to **“the heavens”** which **“were of old”** (v. 5). If that weren't enough Peter goes on to say that the heavens and the earth which are now are to be burned up (negative) and there will be a THIRD set of heavens and earth **“new HEAVENS** (plural) **and a new earth”** (2 Pet. 3:13).

Notice also in this passage of scripture that three times the word “HEAVENS” (plural) is mentioned. To confuse a local flood of the whole earth (Noah's, 2 Pet. 2) that dealt only with the planet earth and not with the **“HEAVENS”** (plural) with a universal flood and destruction that deals with the “HEAVENS” shows the inability and lack of training concerning **“RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH”** (2 Tim. 2:15) as commanded. Division is NEGATIVE. To join that which “the holy scriptures” divide is a satanic, ecumenical approach of interpretation of the Holy Bible.

3.) **“the heavens and the earth, which are now...”** they are still here (7).

4.) **“new heavens and a new earth...”** which shall be (v. 13).

Not only that, in the very same verse there is a SCATHING, NEGATIVE BLAST that all modern apostates repel against, **“by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto FIRE** (negative) **against the DAY OF JUDGMENT** (negative) **and PERDITION** (negative) **of UNGODLY MEN** (negative). The whole verse is NEGATIVE!

It must be understood that God created **“worlds”** (Heb. 1:2)

**“Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the WORLDS”** (Hebrews 1:2).

**“Through faith we understand that the WORLDS were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear”** (Hebrews 11:3).

It seems like many of our brethren have a problem with these two verses for we are yet to hear something from them about these verses for they tell that there were already at least two creations, **“worlds.”** In Hebrew 11:3 we’re dealing with **“things which do APPEAR.”** That is concerning a PHYSICAL CREATION. Therefore, in light of other scriptures, it would not be wrong to say that Hebrew 11:3 supports the fact that not only did God create different worlds – spirit beings, heavenly, things in heaven and things in earth, but also different ages or PERIODS OF TIME. And if that weren’t enough, for those that would doubt that worlds, or planets were not created in Genesis 1:1 and also inhabited (“the sons of God”) then they will have to ignore the FACT that God, in the new heavens (plural) and the new earth will be populated all over again. That was God’s original plan. So to ignore God’s intentions of the future is to shut your eyes to the truth of history. History is meant to be repeated (Eccles. 1:9).

Peter defines a “world” as the entirety of creation: both **“the heavens and the earth.”** The Bible distinguishes **“the world that then was”** from **“the heavens and earth, which are now.”**

You couldn’t possibly say the God created again the world after Noah’s flood, for there is nothing about the “heavens” being destroyed during Noah’s flood. Not only that, where you read the word “heaven” in Genesis 6:17; 7:11, 19, 23 and 8:2 during Noah’s flood, you NEVER read anything about the heavens (plural) being destroyed. Although all flesh on the earth, except for those in the ark, was destroyed by a flood in Genesis 7, the world itself, the heavens that were created in Genesis 1:6-8 and 15-19 and the earth that was re-created after Genesis 1:3, was not completely destroyed. It will be, someday, by fire. After it is, the Lord will re-create the world in Revelation 21, just as He did in Genesis 1:3-27.

**“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief (negative) in the night; (negative) in the which the HEAVENS SHALL PASS AWAY (negative) with a great noise, and the ELEMENTS SHALL MELT (negative) with FERVENT HEAT, (negative) THE EARTH ALSO and THE WORKS that are therein shall be BURNED UP”** (negative) (2 Pet. 3:10).

**“Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens (plural) BEING ON FIRE shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?”** (2 Pet. 3:12).

Note a RE-CREATION right in the very same context.

**“Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for NEW HEAVENS and a NEW EARTH, wherein dwelleth righteousness”** (2 Pet. 3:13).

Now since God is going to RE-CREATE the heavens (plural) and the earth “**which are now,**” (we believe in a literal six-day creation) after the destruction of the Lord puts right in front of the eyes of anybody that reads fifth grade English that you can know the PAST (Gen. 1:2) by studying the FUTURE (2 Pet. 3:13) and you can know the FUTURE by studying the PAST. A great many of the brethren can’t understand that if God is going to destroy the present heavens and the earth in the future that He could have and did the very same thing in the past.

Concerning the first point, if the “**heavens were of old, and the earth**” is speaking of Noah’s flood then you would have a contradiction for during Noah’s flood it is not spoken of as “PERISHED.” There were eight souls that lived during Noah’s flood.

Not only that, Noah’s flood does not mention anything about the heavens perishing. It only affected the people on the earth that drowned.

### Differences Between The Two Floods

Concerning matters of Biblical numerics, the number two has its basic meaning of division. For instance Amos chapter 3, verse 3, say, “**Can two walk together, except they be agreed?**” In Genesis 2 Adam has his side divided; he’s cut open. The main division in the Old Testament is divided, and the main division is between the law and the prophets. Two! The Bible itself is divided by Two Testaments; the Old and the New Testament. Now look at what happens in the second verse in the entire Bible. First, “**In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth**” (Gen. 1:1). Then watch what happens in verse 2, “**And the earth was without form, (NEGATIVE) and void; (NEGATIVE) and darkness (NEGATIVE) was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.**”

Something went wrong. There was judgment. Genesis 1:2 describes the state of the earth after the judgment of God upon the kingdom of Lucifer. This is further explained when in verses 6-8 concerning the SECOND day of creation. He did not say “**that it was good**” as He did in all the other days, vvs. 4, 10, 12 18, 21, 25, 31. Don’t you find that omission rather strange? I mean, here is God saying, “it was good,” “it was good,” “it was good,” “it was good,” “it was good,” etc, but being absolutely SILENT concerning the SECOND DAY of creation. Why??? One brother said, “He forgot to say it that day.” Let’s face it. The SECOND day DIFFERS from all the other days. It is DIVIDED from all the other days in that God does not say, “**it was good.**”

So now we see that verse 2 divides verses 1 and 3 and on the second day of the recreation God does NOT say, “**and it was good**” as He did concerning the other days. We already have two divisions.

If that weren’t enough, look at verse 4. God said, “**and God DIVIDED the light from the darkness.**” The two can’t “walk together!” (Amos 3:3). Now we’ve got three divisions.

But wait a minute. There is yet another division located in verses 6 and 7. And even that is mentioned TWICE. What a blessing!

v. 6 “**And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it DIVIDE (once) the waters from the waters.**”

v.7 **And God made the firmament and DIVIDED (twice) the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so.**”

That means we already have four divisions in the first 8 verses.

1.) The first division is in verse 2 having to do with the earth which **“was without form and void...”**

2.) The second division is in verse 4 where God **“divided the light from the darkness.”**

3.) The third division is in verses 6-8 where God does not say, **“it was good.”**

4.) The fourth division is mentioned twice in verses 6, 7 about the waters above and below were divided by a firmament.

5.) The word **“Heaven”** of verse 8 has to do with the second Heaven. Notice that the translators of the King James Bible could differentiate between that heaven and the **“heaven”** of verse 9, which has to do with the **“waters under the heaven”** which would be on the earth on in the earth’s atmosphere.

6.) The word **“Day”** (v. 5) in the King James Bible has a capital “D.” Isn’t that revelation that “the originals” do not have? Of course. The **“Day”** (capital “D”) is not the same **“day”** (small “d”) of verse 14 for the simple reason that the **“Day”** is absolute **“Day”** of God’s light outside the universe of the third heaven whereas the **“day”** of verse 14 has to do with a 24-hour day or at least that part of the day when there is light on the earth in the first heaven.

7.) Notice the word **“Night”** (capital “N”) of verse 5 is not the same **“night”** of verse 14. Again we’re dealing with the **“Night”** within a closed system, the universe and the night that is shown within a 24-hour day, as you have day and night on the earth. **“Night”** (v. 5) is dealing with the state of the universe from which God separated the light from the darkness which He calls **“Night”** (capital “N”).

8.) In verse 6 the word **“firmament”** is different from the **“firmament”** of verse 20. The **“firmament”** in verses 6-8 (mentioned 4 times) is in the second heaven. The **“firmament”** of verse 20 is that of the first heaven and the earth’s atmosphere.

9.) And finally, the **“waters”** of verse 2 speak of **“the deep”** of the second heaven, whereas the **“waters”** of verse 7 deal with the waters of the first heaven **“under the firmament”**

To ignore these simple Bible facts is to overlook one of the greatest blessings in the Bible. Not only that, if a man refuses to acknowledge these facts then he is disobedient to the word of God commanding that in any matters of Biblical interpretation when it comes to studying the word of God, for him to have God’s approval in such matters he is to **RIGHTLY DIVIDE THE WORD OF TRUTH** which is located in the **SECOND** epistle of the apostle Paul to Timothy and in the **SECOND** chapter. I know, “that’s just a coincidence.” **“Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.”**

For a workman not to be ashamed he is to study the word of God and show himself to be approved of God by **RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE Holy Bible**. And if the Holy Spirit Himself has seen fit to make the divisions that we have already discussed than we are to agree with **HIM**, with no slipping and sliding and private interpretation to side step the facts of Genesis 1:2 concerning God’s judgment on sin because of principalities and

powers in heavenly places that decided to rebel with their leader Satan before Adam and Eve were created.

### History Repeats Itself

As we had mentioned at the start of this work is that “What men learn from history is they never learn from history.” Solomon put it precisely by saying, - **“That which hath been is now; and that which is to be hath already been; and God requireth that which is past”** (Eccl. 3:15).

This verse would support the fact that there was a flood at Genesis 1:2 by the simple fact that the earth that we are on now along with the heavens (plural) WILL be destroyed. You cannot say that the destruction of the heavenS (plural) and the earth will be a repetition of Noah’s flood.

### The Biblical Principle of Numerics

God has a system of numerology laid out in the Bible. The matter God’s number system is the basis for all mathematics. Unfortunately children are not taught that even numbers come from God. For instance, in the Bible, the number one represents God. Two represents division. The number three represents the Trinity, etc.

For those that will not believe this numbering system say that “You can become superstitious with numbers.” Well, the answer to that would be yes. But God has even His number system so worked out so that the believer will not become superstitious. For example, let’s take the number 13.

### The Number 13

The number 13 plays a very interesting role throughout the Bible. In the Bible numbers play a very important role. The number thirteen has always had a bad connotation to it in many cultures around the world. That’s why in many hospitals there is no thirteenth floor (America). Friday the thirteenth is always left a bad omen to it. Not only that, in Job 26 and in verse 13 Job talks about the crooked serpent, **“By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.”** It is not a coincidence that the number 13 has a negative connotation to it around the world. The reason for that is because most often in the Bible the number 13 is associated with a negative verse.

But, so that the believer won’t become superstitious God will put a positive verse next to the number 13. That is the case in 1 Corinthians chapter 13. The whole chapter is talking about charity. Not only that, the chapter has 13 verses. And THAT is what balances the sincere believer from becoming superstitious with numbers in the Bible or in his life practically.

For example, your birthday may fall on the 13<sup>th</sup> of, let’s say, March. So what! Or you may live on a certain street and your house number is 13. There is no need to panic because God himself wrote the word **“charity”** in the 13<sup>th</sup> chapter with 13 verses in it.

There are many other verses in the Bible that have a positive connotation to them where they are located in the 13<sup>th</sup> chapter or the 13<sup>th</sup> verse. That is what helps the believer maintain a balance concerning this issue of numerology in the Bible.

Now that is not the reason to take an extreme side against the Bible where God, also will take a negative verse and put it in a negative verse-reference.

The key to this whole issue is where you CAN apply Biblical numerics, you SHOULD. Where that is not possible, then God has other reasons for it not to be and one reason would be to keep you from becoming superstitious and as a means for your edification and not destruction.

Now to make application of Genesis 1:2, you CAN make application to God's system of numerics in this verse as a number of DIVISION. As we mentioned before there are a number of reasons why we can make the application;

- 1.) Context; God DIVIDED the light from the darkness.
- 2.) Context, On the second day, (number of division) God did not say, "and it was good."

### Revelation 21 and the "...first earth..." God's Strange Way of Counting

Now we've come to the place in scriptures that is used to show that there could not be any "gap" in Genesis 1:2 because of Revelation 21:1 which reads, "And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the **first heaven** and the **first earth** were passed away; and there was no more sea."

Those that teach there is no gap say in so many words, "If the earth which is now is already the second earth, (because of the gap) why does John say this earth is the "first earth?"

Also, it must be mentioned that there are two possibilities of what had happened from Genesis 1:3-27 after the flood in Genesis 1:2. There was most likely a refurbishing of the material of the heavens and the earth from Genesis 1:1 to redo the heavens and the earth "**which are now**" (2 Pet.3:7). In light of what will happen in 2 Peter 3:13, you read this, "**But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.**"

When talking about the "**new heavens and a new earth**" (2 Pet.3:13) there are some that teach that it is not talking about new 'material' to make a *totally different* heavens and earth. The Lord will most likely be using the *same material to redo a new heavens and a new earth*. The Lord would have most likely used the material from the original creation (Gen. 1:1) to form the present world (Gen. 1:3-27). That would make sense.

Throughout the United States there are city laws for people to throw their garbage made of plastic into separate containers for the material to be reprocessed. The material is melted down and reprocessed. That is one pretty sound option of what the Lord will do with the heavens and the earth "**which are now.**" He will melt everything down (2 Pet. 3:7, 10, 12), as a refiner does with gold or silver. That is how the dross is removed. Fire cleans the old material. In Malachi 3:2 we read, "**But who may abide the day of his**

**coming? and who shall stand when he appeareth? for he is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap:"**

That is simply going to be a foretaste of the later "refiner's fire" after the Great White Throne Judgment. God will burn up the heavens and the earth, reprocess them and produce a new heavens and a new earth "**wherein dwelleth righteousness**" (2 Pet. 3:13).

That would solve the problem for those that think that the heavens and the earth that were made in Genesis 1:3-27 were not totally different. That would mean that the original first heavens and earth simply went through a process after the flood. So then, we still end up with this earth as the "**first**" (Rev. 21:1).

But, we're not through yet. There are still some that would think that the heavens and the earth which are now are *totally different* from that which was before Genesis 1:2. If that be the case then we would have to go with the following number system that is located and illustrated in the book of Daniel.

#### Different successions of world powers

##### **First** succession of world powers

To further our thought concerning numbers, the God of the Bible has yet another way of counting which seems rather strange, at least to Kent Hovind and friends, but yet proves to be a very practical way of counting that even children understand, as we shall see.

In the Book of Daniel it was he that interpreted the image of Nebuchadnezzar's dream. Each world power and kingdom mentioned in the interpretation was represented by portions of an image and its respective metals. The *first* world power mentioned in the dream was Nebuchadnezzar himself (Dan. 2:37). The *second* world power was the Medio-Persian (v. 39). The *third* is speaking of Greece (v. 39). And the last, Rome (v. 40).

##### **Second** succession of world powers

Now you will notice something very strange has taken place in chapter 7. Ussher has the time of the events in chapter 2 as 603 B.C. In chapter 7 he has recorded it as in the year 537 B.C. That is a difference of 66 years. That is evidence that Nebuchadnezzar is now dead and gone. For we read in the beginning of chapter 7 about the last king of Babylon, Belshazzar, not about the first, Nebuchadnezzar. Time had elapsed and a new king is on the throne in Babylon. That is clear. Now, when Daniel gets another vision he was to interpret it and again he was to list another set of world powers in sequence as he had previously done in chapter 2. This time, in chapter 7 he uses beasts as representatives of the world powers instead of metals. The "**first**" beast "**was like a lion**" (v. 4) is Persia. Note that Persia is the "**first**" world power whereas in chapter 2 Persia was the *second*. Nebuchadnezzar no longer exists. He is no longer in the list. He was eliminated. Therefore he is no longer the *first*. Persia has "stepped up" into "first place." Let's continue. "**And behold another beast, a SECOND, like to a bear**" (v. 5). Now this is Greece. She has moved up from "third place" (chapter 2) to second. "**After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard...**" (v. 6). The third beast represents Rome. Now she has move up from "fourth place" to third. And lastly, "**a fourth beast, dreadful and**



**terrible**" (v. 7). This is speaking of Anti-Christ's kingdom (Rev. 13). The proof of this numbering system lies in the fact of history. Nebuchadnezzar WAS the first king, but he died. After that, after 66 years (according to Ussher) and according to Daniel 7:1, the last king is mentioned, Belshazzar. Daniel's vision was not about him, but of future kings and thus starts a new numbering system, eliminating king "Nebby" and Belshazzar.

### **Third** succession of world powers

Now if chapter 7 is not enough proof for you take a look what the Bible says in Daniel chapter 8. In verse 21 you will notice that Greece has moved up to be the **"first"** kingdom. How is that? Well, she moved up from the third kingdom (chapter 2) to be the second in chapter 7 and then finally to be the **"first"** in chapter 8:21.

Every time a king and his kingdom passed it was already eliminated in God's numbering system in the Book of Daniel then started a new one. That is so simple.

### Application

The *application* of that is seen and practiced every day. Let's say there are four boys playing darts and choose as to who will go first, then second, third and last. Then one of them needs to go home. Then how many are left? Well, of course three, not four!!! You don't *imagine* a fourth player. Then the boys proceed to play with three and the second boy in sequence becomes the first; the third – second and the fourth – third. That is exactly how God counted those world powers. That that is what's happening in Revelation 21:1, **"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea."**

That means when God created the first "heavens and the earth" (2 Peter 3:5, 6; Gen. 1:2) **"the world that then was"** was eliminated after the flood and God started over in Genesis 1:3 with **"the heavens and the earth which are now"** (2 Pet. 3:7). God doesn't even count the heaven and the earth of Genesis 1:1, it's gone, past, *NOT COUNTED OF*. The proof of this is in Isaiah 65:17 **"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and THE FORMER ("the heavens and the earth which are now") SHALL NOT BE REMEMBERED, NOR COME INTO MIND."** Like the first boy that left. He's no longer counted of.

So the **"heavens and the earth which are now"** (2 Pet. 3:7) are the **"first earth,"** just as John mentions it in Revelation 21:1. The heavens and the earth which are now shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. *IT'S NOT EVEN COUNTED OF!* That is exactly what happened with the counting of the kings in Daniel 2, 7, and 8.

So then when the new heavens and the new earth will be created which is a *RECREATION*, it will be the *ONE*, and *ONLY* heavens and earth as if there weren't any 'old' heavens and earth at all.

You may be asking, "Then why does the Bible say **'for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away...'**" if in actuality it is already the second earth. It is called the "first earth" although in fact it was actually the second.

The same principle is used when David took Bathsheba to be his wife after the murder of Uriah. Death is a divorce. Although David was now the husband of Bathsheba, having a child by her (2 Sam. 12), Matthew chapter 1 makes Bathsheba Uriah's wife

AFTER Uriah's death; 2 Samuel calls her "**his WIFE**" *after* his death (2 Sam. 12:15). Isn't that strange? But, in actuality whose wife was she now? Of course David's. Death is a divorce and David took Bathsheba "**the two shall be one flesh**" (Gen. 2:24). Look at 2 Samuel 12:9 "**and hast taken his wife to be THY wife.**" There is your first witness. Here comes the second, "**and hast taken the wife of Uriah the Hittite to be THY wife**" (v.10). Could any thing be clearer than THAT?

That is the way God looks at a thing at times and you've got to see those differences in scripture or else you'll begin to deny revelation. God's revelation shows His character Who He is. That is what modern Christianity cannot figure out. Modern Christianity in the Laodicean period has got problems with its "**eyes**" (Rev. 3:18).

So while the earth "**which [is] now**" (2 Pet. 3:7), is called the "**first earth**" all the scriptural evidence shows that it is in reality the second. Why? Because Peter lays out three distinct heavens and three distinct earths as was explained in chapter 14. If necessary reread that chapter.

For another example of this kind of 'doctrine' look what the scriptures teach in 1 Samuel 9:9 "**Beforetime in Israel, when a man went to enquire of God, thus he spake, Come, and let us go to the SEER: for he that is now called a Prophet was beforetime called a Seer.)"**

Here you have a case where at one time a man *was* called a "seer." But *now* he is called a "Prophet." Did the scriptures change the name so that a man would be considered now a "prophet?" Look at verse 11, "*And as they went up the hill to the city, they found young maidens going out to draw water, and said unto them, Is the SEER here?*"

The scriptures went right on 17 more times throughout the Old Testament calling the man a "seer" 'contradicting' what the Holy Spirit already stated, "**...for he that is NOW called a Prophet was BEFORETIME called a "Seer.)"** (1 Sam. 9:19; 2 Sam. 15:27; 24:11; 1 Chron. 9:22, etc.). Wild stuff man!

So it shouldn't be any surprise to anyone who is familiar with this kind of stuff to understand Revelation 21:1 in its proper light.

The Bible doesn't even hint toward evolution in Genesis 1:2. It is a destruction because of sin and God's judgment and a recreation just as God is going to judge the heavens and the earth which are now and there will be a RECREATION – "**I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH...**" And besides, the Holy Spirit never even uses the word "re-create" but that is exactly what He is going to do. If God is going to do that in the future, and He is, then to say that that could not have happened in the past is an attempt of trying to eliminate the fact that it did! Then there would be no type and ante type. Then the principle of Solomon would be of none affect – "**That which hath been is now; AND THAT WHICH IS TO BE HATH ALREADY BEEN; and God requireth that which is past**" (Eccl. 3:15).

The recorded events in the Bible, such as Genesis 1:2 speak of the past, describe the present, and predict the future. The only thing that men learn from history is that men never learn from history.

#### Establishing Every Word

**"In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established"** (2 Cor. 13:1).

There are a number of instances throughout the Bible where there are but two different verses in two different parts of the Bible that say the very same thing, where the Holy Spirit writes word for word the same words. Where there are two witnesses to a word-for-word passage in two different parts of the Bible, according to the word of God that means that it is established. For instance you'll find in the Bible the word "vaunteth" is used only two times. In I Corinthians 13:4 Paul writes, **"Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up."**

This author had confronted a pastor of a local Baptist church of northern Indiana concerning the different versions of the Bible. He had mentioned that the King James Bible was not clear in certain portions. When asked to produce some specific places where the Authorized Version was not clear he mentioned I Corinthians 13:4. He said that the word "vaunteth" is not clear. Here is a case where the word is used just one other time. It gives more than enough light to understand its meaning. The only other time "vaunteth" is used is in Judges 7:2, **"And the LORD said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many for me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel VAUNT themselves against me, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me."**

All is clear. The word "vaunt" means to be puffed up or proud. In the case of Gideon, the Lord told him that Israel would be proud, or puffed up thinking that they would be delivered by their own hand and not by God if there were too many in Gideon's army. Not only that, look at 1 Corinthians 13:4 again, **"Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, IS NOT PUFFED UP."** Isn't that amazing how the Authorized Version defines its own terms to make things clear? Right in the very next phrase are the words "IS NOT PUFFED UP." How much more clearer can it be? There was no problem with the text using "vaunteth" in 1 Corinthians.

The problem with many of pastors is that they are too lazy to take a concordance to find the other words in the Bible that give light on its own words. Judges 7:2 is the **"key of knowledge"** (Luke 11:52) that gives the revelation of the meaning of 1 Corinthians 13:4. And that is all you need. There is no need for God to explain what he said in other verses concerning the word "vaunteth." The two witnesses establish the word!!!

The same can be applied to the phrase **"without form and void."**

**"And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters"** (Gen. 1:2).

**"I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light"** (Jer. 4:23).

As we have mentioned before, the Devil would like nothing better than to subtract from God's word (Hello Eve again) do break the cross reference of Genesis 1:2. You've got two verses in the entire Bible that say concerning the earth that it was **"without form and void."** And just because one is past tense (Gen. 1:2) and the other is yet future does not annul the revelation as to what happened and what will happen; God's judgment is right in the context of Jeremiah 4:23. And every Fundamentalist plays the part of the devil's advocate to get you to throw out the second witness to break the cross reference. That is exactly what all the modern versions do with many doctrines in the Bible. For

instance they eliminate the words **“through his blood”** in Colossians 1:14 and justify their position by saying that it is mentioned in Ephesians 1:7.

The warning is clear **“And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod”** (Mark 8:15).

**“It is like leaven, WHICH A WOMAN TOOK and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened”** (Luke 13:21). It’s an effeminate movement, Eve again.

**“A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump”** (Gal. 5:9).

The scriptures say, **“and the scripture cannot be broken”** (John 10:35). But if a little bird comes by and takes away the word of God out of your heart, and you start eliminating verses that the Holy Spirit Himself wrote and repeated somewhere else, then you are guilty of Bible corruption just as Eve was.

Both witnesses, Genesis 1:2 and Jeremiah 4:23 compliment each other and they are two witnesses that STAND against any attacks by any Fundamentalist who thinks that he is smarter than God.

Again lets’ take the phrase

**“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters”** (Gen. 1:2).

**“The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen”** (Job 38:30).

These two verses compliment each other also and are the only two places in the entire Bible where the phrase **“face of the deep”** is mentioned. You do not throw out one of them and leave the other one “hanging” trying to prove some heresy. They both are necessary to prove exactly the location of the face of the deep. We’ve discussed this matter rather thoroughly already.

Many modern Fundamentalists claim that those that believe in the gap are bowing down to evolution. But they, on the other hand are guilty for subtracting from the word of God, thus eliminating the “missing link” of interpretation of the Bible. They become the “evolutionists” by throwing out the proof and then they suggest their own “missing link” just as evolutionists claim to have found the missing link between animals and man. Baloney!!!

Let’s take another example of what Paul said, **“In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.”** The gap fact has many other related subjects to it which would also involve the “man of sin” the “son of perdition” the Anti-Christ. In 2 Thessalonians 2:7 we read, **“For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.”** Commentary after commentary says that that which is taken out of the way is either the Holy Spirit or the Church, although nothing in the immediate context would even hint toward such a thing. But, if one were to take his concordance and find the phrase **“taken out of the way,”** he would have eliminated much searching and weariness of the flesh. For lo and behold, the Holy Spirit gives but one more witness that opens up the revelation as to who is taken out of the way, **“They are exalted for a little while, but are gone and**

**brought low; they are taken out of the way as all other, and cut off as the tops of the ears of corn” (Job 24:24).**

Now what was so hard about that. Look, **“exalted”** because of pride. Satan is the king over the children of pride. **“little while”** already shows it is a Tribulation passage (John 16), **“taken out of the way” as all other** [note the hand of God in the work of the translators of the AV using a cursive where it isn’t in the “originals”], INCLUDING THE ANTI-CHRIST, is defined as **“cut off.”**

No difficulties, no need for another witness. Two is enough. Is that clear??? That goes against all the hot air **“neither shall ye touch it”** (hello Eve, again), of all the commentaries that are stacked up against the established (2 Cor. 13:1) word of God. There is a conspiracy against the method of true Biblical interpretation where scripture should be compared with scripture (1 Cor. 2:14).

Let’s take yet one more example of how the word of God has only two witnesses of the same reading and one witness helps and adds to the other.

The phrase, **“power with God”** is mentioned only twice in the entire Bible Genesis 32:28 and Hosea 12:3.

**“And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed” (Gen. 32:28).**

Now to understand what Moses is writing about the added revelation is in Hosea 12:3, **“And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed.”**

#### The Devil’s Cords

**“His own iniquities shall take the wicked himself, and he shall be holden with the cords of his sins” (Prov.5:22).**

Once you stumble over Romans 5:12 you then have to justify yourself by lying about so many other verses that are intertwined with that verse. Once that happens God creates the spiritual darkness using the devil (1 Kings 22) to cause blindness among Christians to brings about a world wide conspiracy (Rev. 12:9). The devil is called **“the god of this world.”** He is a master at blinding peoples’ eyes.

#### **The first cord – Romans 5:12**

The modern apostate Fundamentalists are simply blinded to the fact of Eve’s fall and Adam’s federal headship of the human race and also the seed bearer. Therefore out goes over 50 verses that tie in with Eve’s fall; “transgression(s),” etc. “deceived,” etc. “beguiled,” etc.

#### **The second cord – Genesis 1:2**

Since they tripped over Roman 5:12, the second cord that holds them is Genesis 1:2. Out goes **“and the earth was without form...”** with its cross-reference. Out goes **“void”** and all of its references. That makes another 15 verses. Out goes **“and darkness was...”** That makes well over 70 verses. And out goes **“upon the face of the deep”** with all of its verses concern “deep(s)” “depth(s),” etc.

The blindness has set in to the point of no return. Too many cords already got them so “tied up” they don’t know where they are at.

### **The third cord.**

Now since Genesis 1:2 has got them all tied up, they can't reach for the sword to "cut the cords." Enter Leviathan, in a body of water over your head. He's a 7-headed monster that has got them right where he wants them, BLINDED to him.

"Call me a hippo. Yeah! That's it ole' buddy Hovind.  
Call me a whale sonny Ham!  
Go get'em Henry! Good job.  
Just don't let them know who I really am."

They are doing his dirty work, covering his tracts and Eve's. Out goes Job 41 with 34 verses. You're "shot" buddy. You're leg's are all tied up. You can't even walk now.

### **The fourth cord.**

There couldn't be any sin or death before Adam fell. That is the fourth "cord;"

### **The fifth cord.**

There couldn't be a race of Pre-Adamic angels that fell before Adam and Eve fell because how could there be sin and death before Adam sinned? That's the fifth "cord."

### **The sixth cord.**

There could not anything be spoken of NEGATIVELY before Adam sinned because there was no evil, sin or death before Adam was created or fell. That is the sixth "cord." Because the Bible says that "**And the earth was without form, (negative) and void; (negative) and darkness (negative) was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.**"

### **The seventh cord.**

Now don't you find it rather interesting that all of this heresy started by these apostates is because they've overlooked the matter in Romans 5:12? The modern creationist uses Romans 5:12 to try to prove that there was no gap of events that occurred between the original creation of Genesis 1:1 and the beginning of the re-creation in Genesis 1:2. The Creationists argue that since sin did not enter the world until Adam that no death or judgment occurred before Genesis 3.

That is a bunch of baloney. Adam was not the first person to sin. Paul said, "**the WOMAN was in the transgression**" (1 Tim. 2:14). You can even read about it in Genesis 3:6 that "**the WOMAN was in the transgression**" before the man.

Not only that, the first sin was not even committed by a human. Satan fell before Eve and Adam sinned. Romans 5:12 has nothing to do with the earth of Genesis 1:1. There were no "men" on the earth of Genesis 1:1. Adam was not the "head" of anything before Genesis 1:28. Adam was the "head" of the world that now exists.

There was a race of "pre-Adamic" angels called the "sons of God." Those "**sons of God**" most certainly were around before Adam, for they sang and shouted when "**the foundations of the earth**" were laid (Job 38:4, 7). They existed before Genesis 1:1. Their head was called the "**son of the morning**" (Isa. 14:12), not "the morning star" as the Russian, Synodal Text reads along with many perverted "bibles" in just about any language around the world, so as to confuse Satan with Jesus Christ (Rev. 22:16). Positionally, he was the cherub that covered God's throne (Ezek. 28:14).

Dr. Peter S. Ruckman, (founder of Pensacola Bible Institute and Pastor of Bible Baptist Church of Pensacola, Florida) says the following,

“Although these “sons of God” are spiritual beings, they can, and do, take on physical bodies like men. These bodies are susceptible to physical death when judged by God (Psa. 82:6, 7 KJV). And although the Scriptures are not forthcoming with details, Lucifer did rebel against God, and a number of sons of God joined him. In judging their rebellion, God drowned the physical goodies of the sons of god by covering the entire earth with a flood. But unlike their counterparts in Genesis 6, the Lord did not confine them, then, to “everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day” (Jude 6). Instead, God would allow them to dwell in the heavens of Genesis 1:6-8 (cf. Eph. 2:2, 6:12). That is why God never called the heavens by themselves **“good”** (Gen. 1:4, 10, 12, 18, 21, 25, 31).

Genesis 1 has two separate creations, with two separate federal heads, and two separate judgments on sin. The creationists don’t know what they are talking about, and to use Romans 5:12 to prove otherwise is wresting the Scripture to their own harm. When it comes to gathering and presenting data against evolution, there are none better. But when it comes to believing and expositing the Scriptures, don’t follow them across the street.” (Bible Believer’s Commentary Series p.)

## **Chapter 15**

### **Who and what is Leviathan?**

Why would such a subject concerning Leviathan play an important role concerning Genesis 1:2? Because the scriptures explain that there were **“sons of God”** before the foundation of the world (Job 38:6). And those that fell were connected with Satan at his fall.

Now that we have eliminated all the guess work and opinions and theories of the non-gappers, concerning when Satan’s fall was, let’s further study the results of God’s judgment upon the fifth cherub that covered before his fall and then became Leviathan, Satan himself.

There are a great number of Christians that have questions concerning who or what Leviathan really is. In this chapter we will discuss the passages where Leviathan is mentioned.

Unfortunately many Fundamentalists have blindly overlooked this doctrinal teaching including men like Kent Hovind (Creation Science Evangelism) who has gone to the extreme to prove that dinosaurs existed to the point of annulling a great number of verses in the Bible that speak of Leviathan not simply as an animal, but a super-natural being, that became Leviathan at his fall. His fall is connected with Genesis 1:2. All of the Fundamentalists disagree amongst themselves thinking that Leviathan is either a crocodile or a whale or a hippopotamus or a dinosaur. Many believe that he is simply some kind of sea monster in some body of water on this earth.

Let's take a look at the scriptures comparing scripture with scripture (1 Cor. 2:13) rightly dividing the word of truth (2 Tim. 2:15) as the prescribed way to search the scriptures as we are commanded (Jn. 5:39).

Leviathan is mentioned only in the Old Testament, and that 5 times.

Where is his dwelling place?

The first time that Leviathan is mentioned is in Job 41:1. ¶ **“Canst thou draw out leviathan with an hook? or his tongue with a cord which thou lettest down?”**

When interpreting the scriptures one must make comparisons (1 Cor. 2:13) and notice the differences (2 Tim. 2:15). We are going to analyze the DIFFERENCES between a number of things in this study-

1. At a glance one would think that this is simply a large animal on this earth. Notice that this chapter begins with Leviathan and ends with the following verse **“He beholdeth all high things: a king over all the children of pride”** (Job 41:34). There is no possible way that any animal on this earth has ever been considered a **“king”** over people. God said that man would have dominion over ALL living creatures. PROOF -

**“And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth”** ( Gen. 1:26).

**“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth”** (Gen. 1:28).

Notice here in verse 28 that God said to Adam to have **“dominion OVER EVERY LIVING THING THAT MOVETH UPON THE EARTH.”**

Therefore to make Leviathan a dinosaur (Ken Hovind) or a crocodile (false translations) or a whale or a hippopotamus (communist “bibles”) is to show ignorance of the word of God for Leviathan is not a land animal, but rather an aquatic.

2. And since Leviathan is a “king” over all the children of pride this **“king”** is not some silly little animal on this earth such as a dinosaur, crocodile or a whale but an angel – a fallen one. PROOF-

He is mentioned in Revelation 11:9 **“And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.”**

Notice that he has a Hebrew and a Greek name as Judas (Greek) Iscariot (Hebrew) (Acts 1:25). We are dealing with a supernatural being and not an not some four-legged animal, or a whale or hippopotamus or a dinosaur.



3. Not only that but this supernatural being SPEAKS! **“Will he make many supplications unto thee? will he speak soft words unto thee?”** (v.3). PROOF-

He spake soft words to Eve, **“Yeah hath God said...”** to every liberal preacher and Fundamentalist to convince them that Leviathan is some silly little animal. And the reason for that is to “cover” his tracks. He doesn’t want people to know who he is; therefore he lies to them and speaks soft words.

4. Leviathan is a supernatural being. PROOF-

It is obvious that Leviathan is supernatural from Job 41:26-29. That is you cannot fight Leviathan with carnal weapons (2 Cor. 10:4), for he is a spiritual being. There is no possible way to deal with this **“BEAST”** but with a two-edged sword (Heb. 4:12).

5. Leviathan would make people FAINT if they were to see him right now (v. 9). There is no record of anyone ever fainting looking upon some whale or dinosaur.

6. This dragon is located in the **“deep”** and in the **“sea”** (v. 31) which most certainly is not the Jordan River or the Mediterranean Sea neither the Pacific nor Atlantic Sea nor any other body of water on this little planet of earth. PROOF-

The first mention of the word **“deep”** is located in Genesis 1:2. In matters of Biblical interpretation there is what is called the “First Mention Principle.” That is whenever a word is mentioned for the first time in scripture then that will be the basic meaning of the word throughout the remaining scripture and in most cases with added revelation. So in Genesis 1:2 there are a number of words that are mentioned for the first time **“without form,” “void,”** and **“darkness”** which are three NEGATIVE words throughout scripture. Also, for the first time in the scriptures (Gen1:2) is found **“the face of the DEEP.”**

**“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”**

This **“deep”** is located above our heads in contrast to deep places on the earth. Again it is very important to learn how to RIGHTLY DIVIDE THE WORD OF TRUTH (2 Tim. 2:15) in order to get the proper interpretation of scriptures. Studying all the passages concerning the **“deep”** takes time and effort, which most Christians will not do, although the COMMAND of the Lord is **“STUDY”** (2 Tim. 2:15) and **“SEARCH the scriptures”** (Jn. 5:39).

Notice that there are **“waters”** (plural) above our heads as Job speaks of in chapter 26:5-13. The fact of the matter is that verses 5-13 are describing the structure of the universe. This is called Biblical Cosmology which is the science (Biblical Science) of the study of the universe; its form shape and location of things within and without it.

Job 26:5 ¶ **Dead things are formed from under the waters, and the inhabitants thereof.**

Job 26:8 **He bindeth up the waters in his thick clouds; and the cloud is not rent under them.** Notice that these waters are held in place **“bindeth up the waters”** in clouds so that the waters won’t come down.

Job 26:10 **He hath compassed the waters with bounds, until the day and night come to an end.**

Notice that these same waters have “bounds.” Notice also that one of the bounds is where eternity starts; **“until day and night come to an end.”** That is where ETERNITY begins. There is no difference between day and night as there is in our solar system. When you reach the boundary of these waters ETERNITY starts.

Now notice something very important in the next three verses;

Job 26:11 **The pillars of heaven tremble and are astonished at his reproof.**

12 **He divideth the SEA with his power, and by his understanding he smiteth through the proud.**

13 **By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.**

Notice that Job is talking about **“HEAVEN”** which is above you and not on the earth in verse 11. Notice also that there is a **“SEA”** in the context of HEAVEN. Then notice in verse 13 that **“HEAVENS”** is mentioned along with the **“CROOKED SERPENT.”**

Now is there anyone that would think that the “crooked serpent” is some silly snake in a body of water here in the earth. If that weren’t enough look at what verse 7 says, **“He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing.”**

The **“north”** in this context has to do with where God is located, **“NORTH”** in the third heaven. That is exactly where Satan wanted to ascend to-

Isa. 14:13 **“For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the MOUNT of the congregation, in the sides of the NORTH:**

Heb. 12:22 **“But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the HEAVENLY Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,”**

Notice that the city of the living God is mount Sion, i.e., located on a **“MOUNT.”**

Also that this Jerusalem is **“HEAVENLY”** Jerusalem where angels are located AND NOT THE ONE ON THE EARTH!!! Again you must learn to RIGHTLY DIVIDE THE WORD OF TRUTH. Notice the difference!

Notice in the following verses how God substitutes the word “NORTH” with Himself, showing you from WHO promotion comes and where HE is located.

Psa. 75:6, 7 **“For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south.**

**BUT GOD is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.”**

Look from what direction the Lord comes during the Second Advent-

Eze 1:4 ¶ **“And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the NORTH, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.”**

Any sound Christian knows that we come back with the Lord from Heaven at the Second Advent. Heaven is considered NORTH in the Bible.

Now we should locate the “waters” called the “SEA” (Job 26:12). That sea is mentioned in Revelation 4:6 “**And before the throne there was a SEA of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.**”

Rev. 15:2 “**And I saw as it were a SEA of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the SEA of glass, having the harps of God.**”

The sea of glass is the floor of the third heaven (Rev. 15:2) and the surface or top of the “DEEP.” The throne of God is past the “north” star (Isa. 14:13; Ezek. 1:4). It is on the “face of the deep” or the universe (Gen. 1:2; Job 26:7-13; 37:9, 10; Isa. 57:15).

Job 38:29 “**Out of whose womb came the ice? and the hoary frost of heaven, who hath gendered it?**

**The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen.”**

Job 41:31, 32 “**He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the sea like a pot of ointment.**

**He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary.”**

The fact of the matter is that the “sea of glass” is the water that is above your head that is frozen on the top of it. Below it is where Leviathan abides. It is called the “DEEP.”

The “sea of glass” is connected also with what Job said, “Hast thou with him spread out the sky, *which is strong*, and as a molten looking glass? (Job 37:18). This verse is another stumbling block (Isa. 28:13) for all your Bible correctors and modern commentators. “[As] a molten looking glass” is like “a sea of glass” (Rev. 4:6; 15:2) which is in heaven. Notice that this “sky” is NOT any sky in this solar system. This is dealing with what is mentioned back in Genesis 1:6-8, “the firmament.” We’ve come again full circle (“the scripture cannot be broken” Jn. 10:35) back to “the face of the deep” (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30).

Job 37:18 “*which is strong*” means, it is “frozen.” It is like a “molten looking glass” because the very same word “glass” is mentioned in revelation 15:2). How much simpler do you want it?

#### What Does He Look Like

Psa. 74:14 “**Thou brakest the heads of leviathan in pieces, and gavest him to be meat to the people inhabiting the wilderness.**”

1. Notice that leviathan has more than one head, “heads.”

2. For us to determine how many heads he has, look at Revelation 12:3 “**And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a GREAT RED DRAGON, having SEVEN HEADS and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.**”

This great red dragon is Leviathan. He is a seven-headed supernatural monster that would make you faint if you saw him. It would take the smallest effort of Leviathan to cause the strongest man on this earth to faint.

3. He has a tail as written about behemoth and Leviathan

Job 40:15 ¶ **“Behold now behemoth, which I made with thee; he eateth grass as an ox.”**

Chapter 41 of Job is simply a continuation of the previous chapter. Behemoth and Leviathan are one and the same supernatural being.

“Behemoth” is God’s own scientific description of the beast of Revelation 13 and Daniel 7- the Antichrist; and no amount of knowledge of “original languages” would enable any scholar (Liberal, Orthodox, or Fundamentalist) to find either reference, in nineteen centuries of study, from any translation of any manuscript, if that scholar had set himself up as a competent (“qualified”) judge of God’s Book. And if all the faculty members of every Christian college and university in America and Europe had the “God breathed originals” in front of their faces, they could no more locate “Behemoth” than they could locate the source of their blindness and confusion.

Here we quote Dr. Peter S. Ruckman on the issue,

“The Hebrew word here is the feminine plural of “bahemah,” for “beasts” or “cattle.” “Behemoth” is a PLURAL animal: “animals.” As three ANIMALS that make up this “animal” (singular) are given in Daniel 7 and Revelation 13. Although it is not necessary for us to go to some Hebrew text to prove our point for the scriptures themselves reveal a composite beast. But where any Hebrew reading or Greek reading AGREES with the Authorized Version of the King James Bible then that could simply be used as more evidence to support a truth that has already been reveal in the Holy Bible. Where any Hebrew or Greek text does NOT agree with the Authorized Version we simply ignore the reading.

God likened His Son to a LAMB; He likens the counterfeit of His Son to a LEOPARD, but it is a LION-BEAR-LEOPARD (a composite beast) with seven heads (Rev. 13:2); it is **“BEHEMOTH”** IN THE 1611 English. God likened His Son to a Worm (Psa. 22:6), a Serpent (John 3:14), a Lion (Rev. 5:5), and a Lamb (1 Pet. 1:19). Why shouldn’t the Son of Perdition be likened to a Lion, Bear, and a Leopard?” (Bible-Believer’s Commentary Series, Job p.)

Concerning Behemoth-

Job 40:17 **“He moveth his TAIL like a cedar: the sinews of his stones are wrapped together.”**

Now notice the connection between Behemoth and the Great Red Dragon-  
Rev. 12:4 **“And his TAIL drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.”**

The word dragon occurs thirteen times in the book of Revelation. The red dragon is not a myth of Chinese and Greek mythology. The red dragon is located in the deep. He is a seven-headed monster and is the actual description of Satan.

Your modern day commentators, fundamentalists and Hebrew and Greek Bible correctors and philosophers think that Leviathan is a crocodile, a hippopotamus, an elephant, or a dinosaur, as Henry Morris thinks. Of course they missed the revelation in Psalm 74:14 (KJV) which speaks of Leviathan having SEVEN heads. He is also mentioned in Isaiah 27:1 and Revelation 12:9). Leviathan is an aquatic animal. He was a cherub (Ezek. 28:14), and not an angel. He is a “**created**” being (Ezek. 28:13). He was the *fifth* cherub that is missing from Ezekiel 1:5 and 10:14 which is why the number *five* is connected with death (Gen. 5:5; Acts 5:5, etc.) He represents the reptilian and aquatic animals before God’s throne (Rev. 4:6, 7). The “**four beasts**” of Revelation 4:6-8 are the “**four living creatures**” of Ezekiel 1:6-10 and 10:1-22. They represent the *four major creations* of “animal” life: 1) the *domesticated* animals (the “**calf**” or “**ox**”), 2) the wild animals (the “**lion**”), 3) the flying animals (the “**eagle**”), and 4) “**man.**” Satan was the fifth cherub representing the *amphibian* and *reptilian* animals. That is why the fifth cherub is missing in Revelation 4:7). That is also why Satan and the Antichrist are called BEASTS (Gen. 3:1).

There is no representative in Heaven for marine animals and reptiles, although one WAS there (Ezek. 28:14), until he fell (Isa. 14:13), and lost his position (Gen. 1:2; 3:1; Job 26:13; Ezek. 28:14; Rev. 12:9).

Chapters 40 and 41 of Job go together. They are a two-part, detailed description of the satanic trinity – “Behemoth” is Satan the son; “Leviathan” is Satan the father. The third part, of this trinity (Satan the unclean spirit) speaks of the unclean spirit in Revelation 9:11 (“**Abaddon**”).

Leviathan is *also* a regular marine animal.

**Psa.104:26 “There go the ships: there is that leviathan, whom thou hast made to play therein.”**

Here is a beautiful opportunity for the scriptures to mix up the minds of those who would think that leviathan is only an animal here on this earth. “Leviathan” in this verse is not a reference to Satan as it is in Job 41; Psalm 74:14; and Isaiah 27:1. Instead, it is a reference to an animal chosen as a TYPE of Satan. In this verse “leviathan” is a whale, a salt-water mammal so unique that it is given as a separate class of “fish” in Genesis 1:21 (Jonah 1:17 cf. Matt. 12:40). The ignorant critics of the King James Bible used verse 26 to mislocate the “leviathan” of Job 41 as an earthly creature so they could ignore what the scriptures said in Psalm 74:14, Isaiah 27:1 and many other verses to cover up for the Devil. Also, this leviathan is not to be confused with the seven-headed, supernatural “serpent” of Revelation 12:3.

Now let’s get some things straight;

1.) There are many gods but there is only one true God, the God of the Bible that created the heavens and the earth.

2.) There are many devils and yet there is only one Devil.

3.) There are many angels but there is only one Angel of the Lord.

- 4.) There are many “sons of God” but there is only One Son of God, Jesus Christ.
- 5.) There are many bibles but there is only one true Bible.
- 6.) There are many baptisms but there is only one true baptism that saves a man.
- 7.) There are many dragons but there is only One Red Dragon located in the deep that is called Satan.
- 8.) There are many serpents (Num. 21:6) on this earth that are most certainly not to be confused with the serpent of Genesis 3 which deceived Eve.
- 9.) There is a leviathan in water down here on the earth which has only one head, but there is a supernatural LEVIATHAN which has seven heads. He is a red dragon. That is Satan!

What names are given to him?

Isa 27:1 ¶ **In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the PIERCING SERPENT, even leviathan that CROOKED SERPENT; and he shall slay THE DRAGON THAT IS IN THE SEA.**

1. This is the final time that Leviathan is mentioned in the Bible.

Why would the Lord have to bother with some kind of animal; whale, dinosaur, alligator or hippopotamus? Why would the Lord have to use his “sore and great and strong sword” to punish Leviathan if he was some animal on this earth???

The ignorant Fundamentalists such as Henry Morris and Kent Hovind have gone to the extreme of proving dinosaurs at the expense of denying close to 90 verses in the Bible that expose the descriptions of Satan. Their eyes are closed simply because they denied a universal flood in Genesis 1:2. Again, in the second verse of the entire Bible we are faced with the “**face of the deep**” (Gen. 1:2) that is also a “**SEA**” (Isa. 27:1). They missed the connection.

Notice the different names given to Leviathan;

- 1.) **“the piercing serpent.”**
- 2.) **“that crooked serpent.”**
- 3.) **“Dragon that is in the SEA.”**
  - A. The piercing serpent is the “**serpent**” of Genesis 3 that deceived Eve and appeared as an angel of light.
  - B. The only other place in the entire Bible where you read “**crooked serpent**” is in Job 26:13. So Isaiah 27:1 is the “**key of knowledge**” (Luke 11:52), that unlocks a tremendous amount of revelation without the help of any Hebrew or Greek text. That is why so many bibles (in any language) have perverted the word of God (2 Cor. 2:17) in Isaiah 27:1 so that you would be hindered from the revelation God would have you to understand concerning Leviathan.
  - C. Re 12:3 **And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great RED DRAGON, having seven heads and ten horns, and SEVEN crowns upon his heads.**

Rev. 12:4 **And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the DRAGON stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.**

Rev 12:7 **And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the DRAGON fought and his angels,**

Michael and his angels would not have to fight with some animal on this earth. That is ridiculous!

Re 12:9 **And the GREAT DRAGON was cast out, that old SERPENT, called the DEVIL, and SATAN, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**

Sound proof that Leviathan is above us and not in water on the earth.

Re 12:13 **And when the DRAGON saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.**

Rev. 12:16 **And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the DRAGON cast out of his mouth.**

Rev. 12:17 **And the DRAGON was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.**

There is no such animal on the earth that has ever gone to “make war” with human beings.

Rev. 13:2 **And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the DRAGON gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.**

Rev. 13:4 **And they worshipped the DRAGON which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?**

Rev. 13:11 ¶ **And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a DRAGON.**

Rev. 16:13 **And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the DRAGON, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.**

Rev. 20:2 **And he laid hold on the DRAGON, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,**

Notice the contrasts-

Notice that all the whales, living creatures of the waters were created... and God saw that it was good.

**Gen. 1:21 And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good.**

Notice also that God made the beast of the earth, cattle, and everything that creepeth upon the earth after is kind and God saw that it was good.

**Gen. 1:25 And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good.**

Again we quote Dr. Peter S. Ruckman,

“But in verses 6-8 God did not say, **“that it was good.”** It is missing. The reason for the omission is obvious if you have already read Ephesians 6:10-13; Isaiah 24:21; and Job 41:31-32. The second heaven, in which we find the solar systems, galaxies, nebula, star clusters, and constellations, also contains the demoniac powers, fallen angels, and Satan himself. This is the domain of the “monsters” whom the ancient “scientists” of Columbus’ day worried about. Having proved that they did not inhabit the waters of the Pacific and the Atlantic, the idiots eliminated them from reality altogether, (as do many Christian conservatives and fundamentalists) entirely overlooking the fact that the “sea” of Job 41:31-32 was not the Pacific or the Atlantic. Man now goes confidently and blithely up into the wrong domain (Psa. 115:16) to contact **“the god of this world.”**

Information from the magazine “Time” shows that our solar system alone is approximately 7,340,000,000 miles in diameter. That is just one solar system. The Milky Way makes our solar system look like a “drop in a bucket” for the Milky Way has in it over 100,000,000,000 stars in it. The Milky Way is just one galaxy in a Super cluster. In just one Super cluster there are said to be 2,500 galaxies. And in the universe there are supposedly millions of Super clusters.

To conclude this particular chapter on the study of Leviathan, we can confidently say that Leviathan is Satan, the Devil, the Red Dragon, the Crooked Serpent, and Behemoth that has deceived many Christians let alone unsaved people. He has deceived a great many Christian leaders (such as Kent Hovind, Ken Ham, Henry Morris, etc.) who have helped the Devil cover his tracts by LYING, saying that Leviathan is simply some animal on this puny, little earth. Nothing could be so farther from the truth than that. That kind of exegesis of the Bible is sloppy, blind, careless, “searching” of the scriptures. For men like Kent Hovind and Henry Morris and a great many other Fundamentalists their reason for that is to prove that dinosaurs existed. They went too far to disprove theistic evolution, but at the expense of sound Bible doctrine. Their minds are darkened to basic Bible truths and eliminated many verses that have to do with Satan.



One must notice the DIFFERENCES between two different things in scripture. Details make a big difference when it comes to interpreting the scriptures. A false witness can cause injury in judgment. Explaining the differences requires noticing details.

Many Fundamentalists have tripped over Genesis 1:2 concerning the **“DEEP.”** They fell backward (Isa. 28:13) and from then on when it comes to sound doctrine the deep and Leviathan they are the blind leading the blind helping the Devil cover his tracks. The Mafia could not do a better job!

### The **“face of the deep”** vs. **“the face of the ground”**

In conclusion of this chapter Leviathan is a gigantic, supernatural seven-headed monster. His fall was in Genesis 1:2 and not in the garden of Adam and Eve. All the information that has been explained shows that God started over with Adam and Eve in the Garden of *this* world; Adam being the federal head. Satan, along with his fallen **“sons of God”** – **“gods”** (Gen. 3:5) [the number 5 being the number of death, and the number 6 being the number of man, when Eve, then Adam fell; see Gen. 3:6] survived the flood and were able to tempt Eve and make their way into this world. That is, the sons of God existed before the flood and after, just as the sons of God were before Noah’s flood and **“after that”** (Gen. 6:4). As we mentioned in the second chapter, if we were to run references with the concordance and find the next time where the holy scriptures has written **“every thing”** you would simply find that it is repeated during the flood of Noah’s day, **“And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and every thing that is in the earth shall die”** (Gen. 6:17).

Cf. Exodus 20:4 **Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:**

Look how the word of God makes the distinction even between **“that is in the earth beneath”** and **“that is in the water under the earth.”**

First of all we’re not dealing with something that is on the earth or even under the earth when you read **“the face of the deep.”**

This is also to prove that Leviathan as an aquatic monster could survive Lucifer’s flood, just as aquatic animals were not gathered into Noah’s ark. They would survive Noah’s flood.

The words **“every thing”** (Gen. 6:17) does *not* mean ‘every thing without exception’ because every thing did NOT die during Noah’s flood. The Ark did not need to carry every kind of animal—nor did God command it. It carried only air-breathing, *land-dwelling animals*, creeping things, and winged animals such as birds. Aquatic life (fish, whales, etc.) and many amphibious creatures could have survived in sufficient numbers outside the Ark. The reason why we say that is because Lucifer survived the flood along with the fallen **“sons of God.”** This simply proves another parallel between two floods

– aquatic animals that survived Noah’s flood are an ante-type of the aquatic monster Leviathan that fell and survived Lucifer’s flood.

If that weren’t enough, look how the Lord makes the distinction between **“the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30) which has to do with a vast body of waters over our heads and **“the face of the ground”** that is connected with the **“earth”** which has to do with land-breathing animals and fowl of the first heaven – Genesis 7:23 **And every living substance was destroyed which was upon the face of the ground, both man, and cattle, and the creeping things, and the fowl of the heaven; and they were destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained *alive*, and they that *were* with him in the ark.**

There are three places in the scriptures where the **“earth”** is connected with the **“the face of the ground”** (Gen. 2:6; 7:23; 8:13), to make a DISTINCTION from **“the face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30) or **“the face of the depth”** (Prov. 8:27) which has to do with a body of waters that have absolutely nothing to do with anything on this earth or on the ground during Noah’s flood. For **“THE FACE OF THE DEPTH”** (Prov. 8:27) is in the HEAVENS, **“When he prepared the HEAVENS, I was there: when he set a compass upon the face of the depth:”**

The phrase **“the face of the ground”** had to do with a *past* event – Noah’s flood. The **“face of the deep”** (Gen. 1:2) [**“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep”**] existed well before Noah’s flood and is a *PRESENT STATE* below the throne of God dividing the second heaven from the third heaven, *AT THIS VERY MOMENT* (2010), **“The waters are hid [PRESENT TENSE] as *with a stone*, and the face of the deep IS [PRESENT TENSE] frozen”** (Job 38:30). That couldn’t be Noah’s flood. Noah’s flood is PAST. The waters of THE FACE OF THE DEEP ARE WRITE NOW EXISTING OVER YOUR HEAD BECAUSE THAT IS THE ABODE OF LEVIATHAN UNTIL THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH ARE DESTROYED FOREVER.

The **“face of the deep”** continues in that state RIGHT NOW until God takes away that great body of water (in other places) called the **“sea”** (Rev. 21:1). If **“the face of the deep”** was a past event and having to do with water on this earth and Noah’s flood, then that means it no longer exists. The fact of the matter is Job reveals PRESENT TENSE truth that our creationist friends seem to have missed.

Thank God that Lucifer will be forever burning in a lake of fire when God creates the new heavens and a new earth. The devil won’t be able to make his way into the new creation as he did previously (Gen. 1:2), and approached Eve (Gen. 3) as an angel of light (2 Cor. 11:14).

## Chapter 16 The Great Deeps A Study of Biblical Cosmology

In this chapter we are going to look further into the subject of Biblical Cosmology, which means the science of geographical location and structure of things of the universe.

In the Authorized Version of the King James Bible (1611), the word **“deep”** is first used dealing with something that is over our heads.

The best commentary of “the holy scriptures,” is *the word of God*, the scriptures, the King James Bible. Therefore it is good to have a concordance to use along with your Bible to see where else the Holy Spirit has written that word. It is so simple, yet so difficult for the proud who won’t trust God, but their own imaginations. It’s like salvation by grace through faith, so easy to receive, yet so difficult for the proud who reject the basic Gospel truth. Amazing!

Now this “**face of the deep**” as mentioned in Genesis 1:2 is also located only more time in the Bible, in Job 38:30, “**The waters are hid as with a stone, and the face of the deep is frozen.**” Speaking of the same thing Solomon writes “**When he prepared the heavens, I was there: when he set a compass upon the face of the depth:**” (Proverbs 8:27).

There is the slight variation of the word “**deep**” to “**depth.**” Nonetheless they are both talking about the same thing doctrinally and cosmologically. We’re dealing with something that is above us in heaven and NOT on this earth.

Now to get even a better understanding of the deep, Job 26 is a classic chapter dealing with the waters above our heads. Job 26 (which is 13 two times; the number 13 basically the number of rebellion) deals with “the crooked serpent” also in verse 13; just a coincidence, right?

The following verses describe the universe and its structure. There is more in this passage about it that in Genesis 1. So let’s take each verse starting in verse 5 and go verse-by-verse with very little comment for the Bible itself is the best commentator of it’s own words.

#### **5 Dead things are formed from under the waters, and the inhabitants thereof.**

Notice first of all that there are WATERS, plural. There are dead things under the waters (plural). Notice that there is something under the waters (v.8). We will come to that. These waters are held in place so that the waters don’t come down (v.10).

#### **6 Hell is naked before him, and destruction hath no covering.**

That is, He can see right on down through it. You can’t see into it but God sees it plainly.

#### **7 He stretcheth out the NORTH over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing.**

This could not be talking about the North Pole or somewhere in the northern part of the globe as the scriptures will speak for themselves. Many times the Bible speaks of two different things with the *same word* showing that visible things are a representation of the invisible.

Let’s take the word “north” for example. It is mentioned 158 times in the entire Bible. This is the first time it is mentioned dealing with the direction UP toward heaven; to the north. This is where God is located. Note how the scriptures speak of God in the place of the “**north**” in Psalm 75:5, 7

“¶ **For promotion cometh neither from the east, nor from the west, nor from the south...But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.**”

You see, he put in Himself, “**God**” instead of “**north**”. He said, “**east...west...south...God.**” David believed God is in the north. Are you a Bible believer?

Now that is revelation concerning another meaning of the word “**NORTH.**” It is straight up.

An illustration of this verse would be when boys would play “king of the mountain” and a boy would have to stand at the top of a hill and defend his position while others would try to pull him down from that top position. Somebody else wants to be the king of the hill.

Now we can locate where the waters really are in this context.

Isa. 14:12-14 **For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:**

14 **I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.**

15 **Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.**

When Satan rebelled he wanted to “**sit upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the NORTH.**” The sides of the north are located “**above the stars**” which means we’re dealing with a location that is above the cosmos, above the “**face of the deep.**”

That could not be anywhere on this earth any more than Pleiades or Orion are located on this earth (Job 38:31). We’re dealing with something that is located above our heads in the “**NORTH**” where God is located.

Look at the following verses concerning where the “**MOUNT**” is cosmologically located –

Heb. 12:21, 22

**And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:) But ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,**

You see, as was mentioned earlier everything that we see on this earth is a representation of what is above and invisible to the human eye. Hebrews 12:22 says there is a “**mount Zion...the HEAVENLY Jerusalem.**” Not only that. You were told that the heavenly Mount Zion is “**on the sides of the north**” (Psa. 48:2)

**Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is mount Zion, on the sides of the north, the city of the great King.**

If you were to take a real close look at Psalm 48:2 and do some serious searching of the scriptures you would come to the following conclusions –

- 1.) It could not be the Jerusalem on this earth for the Jerusalem in Palestine had only one palace (1 Chron. 29:1). Verse 3 mentions “**palaces**” (plural). The apostle John called them “**mansions**” (John 14:2).

- 2.) The earthly Jerusalem is located on the east part of the city and not on the **“north”** while the heavenly Jerusalem is located **“on the sides of the north.”**

### Picture of the universe

Now to try to visualize all that the Bible speaks of concerning its shape would be almost impossible but yet there are enough verses to help us get some kind of idea. The universe, as the Godhead, is a trichotomy. It is shaped like a pyramid with sides, **“sides of the north.”** Those sides go up to form a point as mountain sides go up to form a peak. The Lord Jesus Christ mentioned **“The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner:”** (Matt. 21:42). Notice carefully the words, **“the head of the corner.”** There can be only one corner at the top of this shape. Then the shape of the universe is like a pyramid from which all sides go up to a corner stone. That corner stone is Jesus Christ. He is at the top. There are three “stories” of the universe just as Noah’s Ark had three stories (Gen. 6:16).

Next, just below Jesus Christ in the next level. It would be the “deep.” The surface of it is frozen (Job 38:30), called **“a sea of glass”** (Rev. 4:6; 15:2). This is that great body of waters (plural) of which David spake of in Psalm 148:4.

Then the next level just below the great “deep” is the **“firmament.”** That is mentioned in Genesis 1:6, 8. Notice the word **“firm”** in this word. It is our solar system that holds the “deep” from coming down upon us.

Now if that weren’t enough Psalm 48:2 speaks of **“the city of the great King”** Who is on this mountain. Yes in verses 5, 8, 11, 12, and 13 David is writing about the earthly Jerusalem. But oh, how important it is to “rightly [divide] the word of truth.” The Jerusalem that is on **“the sides of the north”** is that **“Jerusalem, which is ABOVE”** (Gal. 4:26).

Again, **“the sides of the north”** is where Satan said he would **“ascend”** (Isa. 14:13). And **“the sides of the north”** are said to be **“ABOVE THE STARS”** (Isa. 14:13). **“I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne ABOVE THE STARS of God:”**

Now if that weren’t enough, Ezekiel says that at the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, He comes down as a whirlwind out of the **“NORTH.”** That is quite obvious. He has to come down from above. So simple!

Ezekiel 1:4

**¶ And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came OUT OF THE NORTH, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.**

At His ascension into heaven, the Lord Jesus Christ went straight up, north. Thus, it is easily, logically understood that He will come back out of the north.

So, Job 26 is additional revelation as to a great body of waters located “north” way above the “firmament” of the cosmos (Genesis 1:6-8). How do we know that? Because there is only one other place in scriptures written by the HOLY GHOST called **“the face of the deep”** and that is located in Job 38:30 as was already discussed quite thoroughly.

Let's look briefly again at Job 38:29-32

29 **Out of whose womb came the ice? and the hoary frost of heaven, who hath gendered it?**

30 **The WATERS are hid as with a stone, and the FACE OF THE DEEP IS FROZEN.**

31 Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion?

32 Canst thou bring forth Mazzaroth in his season? or canst thou guide Arcturus with his sons?

Notice that the face of the deep is ABOVE OUR HEADS. It has absolutely nothing to do with anything on this earth or in the earth's atmosphere. It is located just under the throne of God where there is a body of waters way beyond the cosmos.

Now look how Job 38:29-32 locates what Moses wrote in Genesis 1:2.

Gen. 1:2 **“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the FACE OF THE DEEP. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”**

We have already established the fact WHY the earth was without form and void. It was because of God's FIERCE ANGER in Jeremiah 4:26 which is in the context of verse 23 which is the cross-reference to Genesis 1:2.

The top of the deep is waters that are frozen called **“the face”** and the Spirit of God moved upon it.

**8 He bindeth up the waters in his thick clouds; and the cloud is not rent under them.**

Notice the **“waters,”** here, are the **“waters”** in verse 10. We're right back in Genesis 1:6-8 and the second heaven on the 2<sup>nd</sup> day of re-creation.

**“...and the cloud is not rent under them.”** Which speaks of the firmament (Gen. 1:6, 7) **in the midst of the waters (2<sup>nd</sup> heaven) and let it (“the firmament” Gen. 1:6, 7) divide the waters (2<sup>nd</sup> heaven) from the waters” (1<sup>st</sup> heaven).**

Notice that the **“waters”** are the waters mentioned in Psalm 148:4 that are above the first heaven, at the top of the second heaven **“...and ye waters that *be* above the heavens”** and just before the third heaven.

So there you have it, **“the cloud”** which **“IS”** (present tense, right now) not rent **“under them”** (i.e., under the **“WATERS.”**). That cloud is **“the firmament”** (of Genesis (1:6) that separates the waters above (i.e., the deep) from the waters below (on the earth).

Waters are held in place by a cloud called **“the cloud”** so that the waters (the deep) don't come down.

Now, how else do we know where this is all located? By the following context –

**9 He holdeth back the face of his throne, and spreadeth his cloud upon it.**

You couldn't possibly think that this is talking about his throne on earth. That's impossible. Job spoke that 1700 years before Jesus Christ showed up on this earth. Look at the tense – **“He holdeth...and spreadeth”** both verbs are in the PRESENT TENSE.

The phrase **“his cloud”** is not in this earth's atmosphere, but a cloud that is under the throne that is NORTH; STRAIGHT UP! So **“his throne”** is up there in the third heaven right above **“the face of the deep,”** the deep which is a vast body of water where Leviathan is, which is held up by a firmament (Gen. 1:6).

So simple and logical if you just believe what you read.

**10 He hath compassed the waters with bounds, until the day and night come to an end.**

We're still up in the 2nd and 3rd heavens. How do we know that? Because the waters have bounds to them and those boundaries are what separate time from eternity. One of the boundaries of the waters is where eternity starts **“until day and night come to an end.”**

There is no “day” and “night” in the third heaven where eternity is.

**11 The pillars of heaven tremble and are astonished at his reproof.**

We're still in heaven. This has nothing to do with water on the earth.

**12 He divideth the sea with his power, and by his understanding he smiteth through the proud.**

Those same waters can be DIVIDED. And when they are divided there is something in it. Look at the next verse. It's the crooked serpent, the Devil.

The Lord divided those waters just as He divided the Red Sea. He divided it 4 times between Matthew 1 and Acts 2 going up through it to get to the third heaven and come down to this earth.

When Moses went through the Red Sea (Exodus 15) it was a type of the Lord Jesus Christ coming through a body of water called a “sea.” He will come through that sea at the Second Advent (Habakkuk 3:15) **“Thou didst walk through the sea with thine horses, through the heap of great waters.”**

Those waters are mentioned throughout the entire Bible, but let's see them in Psalm 148:4 **“Praise him, ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that be above the heavens.**

The practical application of this is like water over a sinner which is a picture of God's wrath on a sinner (Psa. 69:2; 88:6, 7; 1 Pet. 3:20).

The doctrinal application is everyone on this earth is “immersed” right now under water that is located above our heads.

Solomon, along with Job believed there are waters called “the deep” in the HEAVENS (plural) –

**“When he prepared the heavens, I was there: when he set a compass upon the face of the depth:”** (Proverbs 8:27).

The “face of the depth” has nothing to do with what is on the earth because we already saw the difference between **“the face of the earth”** and **“the face of the deep.”**

One is on the earth; the other in what divides the third heaven from the second. One says “earth” the other “heaven.”

That is so simple if one obeys the command to “study” and do as the Book says - **“rightly [divide] the word of truth.”**

Jeremiah, along with Moses, Solomon and Job believed also that there IS (present tense) a great body of waters above our heads –

**“When he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters IN THE HEAVENS; and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth: he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures”** (Jeremiah 51:16)

To understand where the Lord is located in relation to those waters, right in the context of this verse Jeremiah mentions the following in verse 13 – **“O thou that DWELLEST UPON MANY WATERS, abundant in treasures, thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousness.”**

Nothing could be clearer than that, that the Lord dwells (PRESENT TENSE) **“upon many waters”** and those waters are **“in the heavens”** (plural) in verse 16. So there can be no mistake by trying to interpret these passages as if the scriptures are talking about the earth’s waters.

If that weren’t enough look at Psalm 29:3. Only a blind reader of the scriptures could pass up such obvious revelation, **“The voice of the LORD is upon the waters: the God of glory thundereth: THE LORD IS UPON MANY WATERS.”**

First of all notice that the LORD is RIGHT NOW (present tense) upon many waters. Also, that the **“MANY WATERS”** is called a **“FLOOD”** in verse 10, **“THE LORD SITTETH UPON THE FLOOD...”** which is also mentioned in Habakkuk 3:10 and in Revelation 4:3-6 which speaks of the **“throne”** in heaven (v. 4) **“lightnings and thundering and voices”** (v. 5) as in Psalm 29. And in verse 6 there **“was a sea of glass like unto a crystal...”** which brings us full circle again and takes us back to a FLOOD of Genesis 1:2 that has to do with **“the face of the deep.”**

Again in the Psalms we read this,

**“The earth is the LORD’S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.**

**For he hath founded it upon the seas, and established it upon the floods”**

**Who shall ascend into the hill of the LORD? or who shall stand in his holy place?**

(Psa. 24:1-3)

In this Psalm there is water above our heads right in the context of the **“hill of the LORD”** and **“his holy place.”** Yes, there is the Zion on a “hill” on this earth (Psa. 2:6) but notice the wording carefully in Psalm 24:3, **“Who shall ASCEND...”** The only other time in the entire Bible where the wording is *the exact same* is in Romans 10:6 having to do with the Lord Jesus Christ ASCENDING INTO HEAVEN, **“Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:)”**

So what you’ve got in Psalm 24:2 is revelation to Genesis 1:1 and the original creation before Him. Then, when Lucifer rebelled God judged with the waters in Genesis 1:2 *right before His presence* **“his holy place”** (Psa. 24:2). The earth then was **“standing out of the water and in the water”** (2 Pet. 3:5, 6). The earth *BECAME* (as we mentioned



earlier) **“without form and void,”** (Gen. 1:2) and **“being overflowed with water, perished”** (Pet. 3:5, 6).

The BOOK is tremendous, isn't it!

Back to Job –

**“...he smiteth through the proud.”**

The **“proud”** here can only mean a certain group that is connected with Satan, the **“crooked serpent”** located in the very next verse. Ah yes, we've read about this group before (Gen. 6:2, 4; Job 1:7; 2:1), the **“sons of God”** which are fallen angels. The **“proud”** are connected with the **“king over the children of pride”** (Job 41:34) **“He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.”**

So the **“sea”** which is divided in Job 26:12 is in the heavens. How do we know that? In verse 13 we have the crooked serpent. Number 13 (for the most part) is the number of rebellion in Biblical Numerology. Let's locate where he is. Look at the next verse –

**13 By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.**

Now here is tremendous revelation concerning how Satan came to be Satan. **“His hand”** is God's hand and because of disobedience, just as Eve and Adam were judged and died immediately spiritually and eventually physically, so also did Satan disobey and was judged for that and is now also called **“Lucifer”** (Isa. 14:12-14) according to the King James Bible. No other “bible” has that revelation.

Isaiah 27:1 also gives us information concerning the crooked serpent, **“In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that CROOKED SERPENT; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.”**

So that is exactly as you find it in Job 41, for the **“crooked serpent”** (v. 13) is in the **“SEA”** (Job 41:31) above your head which is also called **“the deep”** (Job 41:32). Let's look at Job 41:31-34 –

v.31 **He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the SEA like a pot of ointment.**

v.32 **He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary.**

v.33 **Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear.**

v.34 **He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.**

*Supposedly* during the Middle Ages, during the time of Christopher Columbus there was the teaching that if you kept sailing west, you would eventually come to the edge of the earth, where the oceans stopped, and awaiting you was a great red dragon. Columbus set to sail west and returned with the news that there was no “edge” or “drop-off” or “dragon.” Since Columbus disproved this myth people have not wanted to recognize the fact that **“the deep”** in discussion here has nothing to do with such Oceans as the Atlantic, Pacific, Indian, etc. Comparing scripture with scripture there is only one true interpretation concerning **“the deep”** here. It is that which is first mentioned in Genesis 1:2. Concerning **“the sea”** it is that of Job 26:12. Its **“waters”** are over the second heaven

(Psa. 148:4). It is inhabited by a “**crooked serpent**” (Job 26:13), which is a “**dragon**” (Isa. 27:1). That “**great red dragon**” is still up over our heads (Rev. 12:3, 9) in a “**Red Sea.**” That “**sea**” is northward (Job 26:7) between you and God (Job 37:18).

Notice in verse 34 that “**he is a king over all the children of pride.**”

This couldn't possibly be talking about any kind of a dinosaur here on this earth. Brother Hovind missed that blessing.

Your modern fundamentalists and conservatives cannot endure sound doctrine (2 Tim. 4:3).

For further revelation John spoke of God's throne in heaven with a body of water under it called “a sea of glass” –

Rev. 4:6 **And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.**

Rev. 15:2 **And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.**

So in Revelation when John said there is no more sea, he is talking about the sea that is above our heads, the deep, which is done away with along with the firmament, then God's perfect light will then shine forth and all is absolutely light; thus a new heavens and a new earth.

Now to illustrate the doctrine of the deep it is like a man that ice fishes. He first cuts a hole in the ice and pulls the fish out with a hook. It is the same thing that will happen to those in Christ when He raptures them out. He, as the fisherman Who is located above the waters, where the face of the deep is frozen. There is a whole located up there through which he will pull us up and “reel” us to that bright golden “shore.”

#### A deeper look at the deep

If the evidence in our previous chapters hasn't been enough for those who still refuse to accept the evidence given thus far, we will try one more time, again from the scripture to show that beyond a shadow of a doubt the fact of a great body of water above our heads, where it is located, who is in it and what it is not. For this we must go first of all to Paul's prayer in his epistle to the Ephesians 3:16-19.

**That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;**

**That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,**

**May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;**

**And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.**

This is a prayer of Paul for the Christian. Verse 19 is a favorite verse for all modern preachers to connect with verse 18, saying, “to know the width, length, depth and height of the love of God...” which is absolutely WRONG. Note the comma at the end of verse 18 and also the word “and” which starts verse 19. That causes a DIVISION. In verse 18 we are dealing with Biblical Cosmology in this prayer. Biblical Cosmology is the study of the universe; such as where things are located and what is in the universe, the shape and size of the universe, etc. His prayer was serious enough that we might comprehend Biblical Cosmology because there is also the possibility of some heretic trying to undermine the sound Biblical doctrine or a number of doctrines connected with the doctrine of “the deep” such as Who is Leviathan? About the fall of Satan? Why does God judge? When did God first judge? Who did God judge? How did God judge? Etc.

## **Chapter 17** **“The crooked serpent”**

**v. 13 By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.**

The top of the deep has WATERS. Note the following verses that deal with a sea.

**And before the throne there was a SEA of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.** (Revelation 4:6)

**And I saw as it were a SEA OF GLASS MINGLED WITH FIRE: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, STAND ON THE SEA OF GLASS, having the harps of God.** (Revelation 15:2)

**Praise him, ye heavens of heavens, and ye waters that be above the heavens.** Psalm 148:4

Dr. Peter S. Ruckman writes –

“Satan is located in the deep. That is his territory. This deep would lie at least 100,000,000 miles beyond the great “Bay Nebula” of the constellation of Orion. Satan is a king over all the children of pride.”

To further illustrate what the Bible teaches concerning the waters of the deep there are many types of these waters shown throughout the scriptures. For instance, since Jesus went back to heaven after his resurrection he was to sprinkle blood on the altar there in the third heaven. That blood was to permeate the waters of the deep and fill the whole universe. Why? For there is a sea on this earth called the RED sea. God commanded Moses to strike those waters so that the waters would turn to blood, blood RED. In Exodus 15 that sea was split for Moses and the nation Israel to cross through to get over on the other side. That is a type of those that go to heaven. They go through the universe, through a red sea. Pharoah, a type of the Antichrist was slain right in the midst of the

waters. There will be a future Star Wars, where Satan the RED Dragon will be slain, just like mariners slay whales in the waters of the seas.

Elijah is another type of those crossing through waters to get on the other side. Elijah had to cross the Jordan. The waters opened up and closed. The same is what will happen with the saints during the Rapture. They will travel through the waters over their heads. They will go through the face of the deep and end up right above it into the third heaven.

Another illustration that shows the principle of us being under water is what Habakkuk says about people as fish. A fisherman who ice fishes takes a saw and cuts out a whole from the top of the ice to pull the fish out. As a fish you are to be brought out through a hole just having been caught, that is saved by the Lord. Listen to what Habakkuk has to say about this matter, **“And makest men as the fishes of the sea, as the creeping things, that have no ruler over them?”** (Hab. 1:14). It was the Lord Jesus Christ that said, **“Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.”** (Matt. 4:19). The first four men that Jesus Christ picked as disciples were fishermen.

The fact of the matter is that every body living on this earth are under water. Those that do not get saved end up in a LAKE of fire. They will have to swim in it and burn forever. Those that are saved will be pulled up out of the water, through a whole at the top of the deep where the water is frozen.

There are yet even more illustrations to prove what the Bible teaches about water being over our heads. There are people that go into outer space that are called astronauts. Astro means “star.” Not only that, the word “nautical” has to do with seas and navigation. If that weren’t enough a ship has to do with waters. A spaceship has to do with waters in or above space.

As it is impossible for deep sea divers to go into the deep waters without an oxygen tank, so also is the case when a spaceship goes up into space. The astronauts need oxygen to breathe because of the pressure.

And finally one more obvious observation we can make is that waters have waves. But there is also such a thing as AIR waves. Satan is called the **“prince of the power of the AIR”** (Eph. 2:2).

Now let’s get back to interpreting Job 26 for it is quite worthy of reviewing and repeating some things in that classic chapter for serious thought and believe them –

### **8 He bindeth up the waters in his thick clouds; and the cloud is not rent under them.**

There are waters above the firmament. These waters are called the **“deep”** (Gen. 1:2). These waters are held in place by a cloud **“which is not rent under them”** that is, the waters so that the waters don’t come down. The cloud is the firmament that is between the waters above the firmament where **“the face of the deep”** is located (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30) and the waters that are below the firmament. Jobs words are confirmed by what Moses wrote in Genesis 1:6-8. That speaks of the second day of creation where you will NOT find **“and God saw that it was good”** as written throughout the rest of the creation days for the simple fact that Lucifer had already been judged. He and the fallen sons of God were now contained to the second heaven where the deep is located.

### **9 He holdeth back the face of his throne, and spreadeth his cloud upon it.**

Here the Lord holds back the face of His throne by spreading a cloud so that you cannot see all the glory, brightness and power of the third heaven. So when you look up into the sky at night time you see darkness for the waters are so deep that you cannot even image what's on the other side unless you've got revelation from the Holy Bible. When you look up into the heaven all you can see is darkness. So that is what Paul explained when he wrote 1 Corinthians 13:12, **“For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.”**

#### **10 He hath compassed the waters with bounds, until the day and night come to an end.**

Just as you have bounds by the oceans and seas so also there are bounds to the waters above our heads. Beyond those boundaries of the waters above our heads is where ETERNITY BEGINS for Job says, **“until the day and night come to an END.”** There is no day coupled with night in the third heaven. That is why God makes a distinction between eternity in the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven “Day” and that of the second heaven night, for he **“divided the light from the darkness”** (Gen. 1:4). We're not talking about the light of the sun in our solar system, for that doesn't not come into existence until the fourth day spoken of in Genesis 1:14-19. Day and night means that there is a passing of time. But in eternity it is all completely bright and glorious “Day” (with a capital “D.”)

Notice how the translators of the King James Bible capitalized the word “Day” in Genesis 1:5 to show you the DIFFERENCE between that “Day” and the **“day from the night”** of Genesis 1:14.

To further illustrate this fact it was the apostle Paul, when making his defense before King Agrippa, he told how he met the Lord on the road to Damascus **“At midday, O king, I saw in the way a LIGHT FROM HEAVEN, ABOVE THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE SUN, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me”** (Acts 26:13).

Can you image that? It was at “midday” when the sun of our solar system was shining very bright, but Paul spoke of another kind of light, **“ABOVE THE BRIGHTNESS OF THE SUN...”**

That is what Job is talking about **“until the day and night”** [of our solar system] **come to and end.** That is where ETERNITY begins.

#### **11 The pillars of heaven tremble and are astonished at his reproof.**

God, in His wisdom has created some kind of pillars in heaven. This could also be something in a spiritual sense if not literal as in Proverbs 9:1. For example Peter and James and John are called pillars. **“And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision”**(Gal. 2:9). But then again, this spiritual application could indicate that there are literal pillars in heaven.

#### **12 He divideth the sea with his power, and by his understanding he smiteth through the proud.**

These waters now called a sea can be DIVIDED. These waters that can be divided have a monster in them called Leviathan. He is mentioned here as **“the proud”** and also right in the next verse **“the crooked serpent.”** He is also mentioned of in Job 40:19, **“He is the chief of the ways of God: he that made him can make his sword to approach unto him.”**

Notice something very interesting about the words, **“he that made him can make his sword to approach unto him.”** That is, God can make His sword to approach unto him – Leviathan. Well, God’s sword is the word of God. **“For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged SWORD, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.”** (Heb. 4:12).

Can you imagine Kent Hovind thinking that God’s sword is to approach a DINASAUR? Absolutely foolish! What in the world would God be doing wasting even 20 seconds with a little animal located on this tiny earth? The fundamentalists are still trying to figure out whether it is a whale, crocodile, hippopotamus, “Lock-ness” or something else. That is simply child’s play. Paul said, **“when I became a man, I put away childish things.**

Leviathan is also spoken of in Job 41:34, **“He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.”** He will be represented as the Antichrist on this earth (Zech 11:17); and there is only one way to deal with him, and that is with a sword (Heb. 4:12) as we mentioned above. But look at Zechariah 11:17, **“Woe to the idol shepherd that leaveth the flock! the sword shall be upon his arm, and upon his right eye: his arm shall be clean dried up, and his right eye shall be utterly darkened.”**

Notice the **“SWORD”** again in this verse.

Don’t you find the Bible rather interesting that in one place the **“SWORD”** is to approach Leviathan (Job 40:19) and that the **“SWORD”** (a literal one) is going to wound the arm of the Antichrist, Leviathan’s (Satan’s) representative on this earth during the Great Tribulation? (Zech. 11:17)

Now how is THAT for revelation? These kiddies (Hovind, Ham, etc., that are covering up the tracts for Satan don’t even know where they are at.

### **13 By his spirit he hath garnished the heavens; his hand hath formed the crooked serpent.**

Now we are getting much more specific. The devil is in a body of water above our heads called “the deep.” Notice something here very interesting. This verse is located in the 26<sup>th</sup> chapter. 26 divided by 2 = 13. Not only that we are located in the 13<sup>th</sup> verse. Number 13 in the Bible is the number of REBELLION. And who is the first one ever to rebel? SATAN.

God, in Genesis 1:2 had formed the crooked serpent as a result of his rebellion. The number 2 is the number of DIVISION. In Genesis 1:3 God began to recreate. In verse 4 He’s already made the DIVISION between that which is in the THIRD heaven and that which is below the THIRD heaven; the SECOND heaven, which also means DIVISION. For in the SECOND heaven there was a division between God (THIRD heaven) and Satan (SECOND heaven).

Notice further what the Holy Bible says about leviathan in Isaiah. **“In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea.”** (Isa. 27:1).

We return right back to “THE FACE OF THE DEEP” which is mentioned in Job 41:31-34.

He maketh the deep to boil like a pot: he maketh the sea like a pot of ointment.

He maketh a path to shine after him; one would think the deep to be hoary.

**Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear.**

**He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride.**

Leviathan is not simply some animal on this earth. He is a supernatural being called, Satan, the Red Dragon, the Devil, etc. This real beast is difficult to understand for the wise scholars of the Alexandrian Cult (whether a Conservative, Evangelical or whatever) who think leviathan was a whale, hippo, elephant, insect, or dinosaur that God must slay with the sword. **“Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools”** (Rom. 1:22).

We can conclude that what Paul had prayed for is so that we could have a better understanding concerning the universe that we live in, what shape is it, why the earth was without form and void, for what reason did God judge it in Genesis 1:2, etc.

This has been a doctrinal study of Biblical Cosmology how that we are under water as fish. Jesus said, **“Follow me and I’ll make you fishers of men.”** Some day Jesus is going to pull us out of from under the water. Are you trying to catch men???

## **Chapter 18** **TWO’S and THREE’S** and Interpretation of the Scriptures

Throughout this work we’ve taken key passages and found out with a concordance where the very same words of a particular verse are found in only ONE other place. When that happens, that is, when there are no other places found in the Bible except in only TWO places, that is all God is going to say about those words. You’re not to take away from one passage leaving only one passage left. There must be at least two passages for any subject to be established. That is what makes the difference between man’s explanation in a passage and God’s personal interpretation of any other passage. He has said ENOUGH and each verse will supplement each other for the proper revelation and interpretation of what is written. That’s it! You’ve got to accept that as His final word, without trying to add to, or take away from what God said. Here are some Biblical rules concerning interpreting a passage –

1. Always believe the Biblical exegesis over man’s explanation. There is a big difference.

Man says, that **“the earth was without form and void”** (Gen. 1:2) is connected with creation. The Biblical exegesis dictates according TO THE VERY SAME WORDS in Jeremiah 4:23 that it has to do with JUDGMENT. That’s it. It’s final. Just BELIEVE

THE WORDS OF GOD'S EXPLANATION and not man's and don't waste your time with conservative thieves that are trying to steal the very words out of your Bible.

2. Two witnesses are necessary for a thing to be established. Note the following verse that is mentioned *TWICE* in the entire Bible; once in the Old Testament and once in the New.

“...at the mouth of **two** witnesses, or at the mouth of **three** witnesses, SHALL THE MATTER BE ESTABLISHED” (Deut. 19:15).

“In the mouth of **two** or three **witnesses** SHALL EVERY WORD BE ESTABLISHED” (2 Cor. 13:1)

3. Three witnesses would be even better.

“**Two are better than one**; because they have a good reward for their labour” (Ecc.4:9).

“And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him; **AND A THREEFOLD CORD IS NOT QUICKLY BROKEN**” (Ecc.4:12).

This rule would apply to “**the face of the deep**” (Gen. 1:2; Job 38:30; Prov. 8:27) for it is mentioned only *THREE* times in the entire Bible. That is enough to prove that it is above us and not on the earth because it stands in CONTRAST to “the face of the EARTH.” (Gen. 2:6; 7:23; 8:13). Don't add to Genesis 1:2; Job 38:30 and Prov. 8:27 and don't take away from them. They can explain themselves and there is no need to try to “help God out” by adding your two cents to the issue just because you are trying to prove something just for your own ministry.

Tabb is absolutely wrong to say that any and all passages concerning the “deep” apply to water on this earth. BALONEY!

Two times and only two times is the phrase mentioned “**the earth was without form and void...**” (Gen. 1:2; Jer. 4:23). The second passage explains the first. That is the “**key of knowledge**” (Luke 11:52). Don't mess with the passage. The first passage is past tense; the second future. The first is the type of what will be past tense also (Jer.4:23). You don't need any more light on the subject. Don't take away from it and don't add to it. Just believe it no matter what our brethren say.

### “taken out of the way”

Let's look at another example of this Biblical approach to Bible interpretation. A so-called difficult passage is 2 Thessalonians 2:7, “**until he be taken out of the way.**” Some say it is the church, or the Holy Spirit. Nothing of the kind! By taking a concordance and finding the reference “**taken out of the way,**” is easily found in Job 24:24, “**They are exalted for a little while, but are gone and brought low; they are taken out of the way as all other, and cut off as the tops of the ears of corn.**”

Let's break the verse down:



The context is the wicked AND A TRIBULATION CONTEXT. Read the whole chapter!!! Note **“And then shall that Wicked be revealed...”** (2 Thess. 2:8).

- 1.) The words, **“a little while”** Job 24:24 is Tribulation context. Note Psa. 37:10 and the wicked, along with Isa. 10:25, and especially John 16:16-19. They are ALL TRIBULATION CONTEXTS!!!
- 2.) The words **“cut off...”** means they are killed. Note that phrase as mentioned throughout the entire Bible (Gen. 9:11; Exod. 9:15; Psa. 37:9, 28; and Daniel 9:26 concerning the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3.) If that weren't enough, a slight variation of the phrase “taken out of the way” is mentioned in Proverbs 25:5, **“Take away the wicked...”**

So, Job 24:24 is the ONLY OTHER PLACE IN THE ENTIRE BIBLE where **“taken out of the way”** is located verbatim. That means that God is going to give you revelation about who 2 Thessalonians 2:7 is talking about. When you have no other options you are to BELIEVE WHAT GOD SAID, NO ARGUMENTS!!! Just BELIEVE it!

So we can confidently say that –

- A. As Job 24:24 is the **“KEY OF KNOWLEDGE”** (Luke 11:52) that unlocks the revelation to 2 Thessalonians 2:7, and
- B. As Judges 7:2 is the **“KEY OF KNOWLEDGE”** or the revelation from God Almighty concerning what 1 Corinthians 13:4 **“vaunteth”** means,
- C. So Jeremiah 4:23 concerning the earth being **“without form and void”** although this is a Tribulation context, verse 25 is the **“KEY OF KNOWLEDGE”** that unlocks the revelation of what happened in Genesis 1:2.

### **“sides of the north”**

It is worth repeating that the phrase **“...the sides of the north...”** is mentioned only twice in the entire Bible.

To make things even more interesting to show that “the sides of the **north**” has to do with “things above” (Col. 3:2), the phrase “the sides of the **EARTH**” would be its CONTRAST. “Thus saith the LORD, Behold, a people cometh from the north country, [on the earth] and a great nation shall be raised from the **sides of the earth**” (Jer. 6:22).

To say that “the sides **of the north**” has to do with earthly things is simply absurd and absolutely uncalled for.

## **Chapter 19**

### **Why would it be so hard for some to believe?**

Why would it be so hard for some of our brethren to believe what has been discussed especially when the word of God says, **“For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse”** (Romans

1:20). This verse is simply saying that the eternal truths of God **“the invisible things of him”** can be clearly understood **“by the things”** that you can see **“that are made”** so that you can understand God Himself and the Trinity **“Godhead.”** Therefore, whether those that don’t understand these things being saved (Fundamentalists, the creationist movement, etc.) or unsaved **“they are without excuse.”** In other words there are things that are on this earth that have taken place historically or are present today to show us things that are true Biblical facts of things we can’t see, and that are a reality.

The following is a small list of examples –

1. It’s not too hard to understand that there is a throne up in the third heaven since there was a literal throne in Jerusalem, Palestine and there will be in the Millennium.

2. It wouldn’t be hard to understand that the tabernacle of which Moses was given instructions to build was after a pattern of the temple located in the third heaven.

**“According to all that I shew thee, after the pattern of the tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, even so shall ye make it”** (Exodus 25:9).

3. Moses was given instructions to build an altar for the holy of holies where the ark was. On both sides of the ark where cherubims (Exod. 25:18). Is not this a picture of the reality in the third heaven?

4. The whole account of the escape of Israel out of the clutches of Pharaoh, who is a type of the devil and his workers of iniquity, who would be a type of fallen angels, “the sons of God” is a clear picture of the future event when the saints are Raptured out of this ole-world and take a flying trip right through the waters above. Note the following –

1.) **“And it came between the camp of the Egyptians and the camp of Israel; and it was a CLOUD AND DARKNESS TO THEM, but it GAVE LIGHT BY NIGHT TO THESE: so that the one came not near the other all the night”** (Exodus 14:20).

So also there is also a cloud and darkness up in the second heaven but to those in the third heaven it is LIGHT, because in the second verse (2 being the number of division, Gen. 1:2) of the entire Bible says, **“the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”** **And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God DIVIDED the light from the darkness.”**

2.) **And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided.**

**And the children of Israel went into the midst of the sea upon the dry ground: and the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left** (Exodus 14:21).

The scriptures undoubtedly show a beautiful picture of the Rapture. **“Moses”** [a type of the Lord Jesus Christ] **“...stretched out his hand over the sea...”** exactly as the Lord will do over the sea above, will send a **“strong east wind”** which will be the breathe of God so that the **“waters [will divide]”**. **“And the children of Israel,”** (Israel being a type of the church) **“went into the midst of the sea...”** speaks also of the saints in Christ, **“...upon the dry ground...”** won’t get wet. **“...the waters were a wall unto them on their right hand, and on their left.”** There is no other event other than the

Rapture of the body of Christ that speaks of the believers going through the waters as this event.

This whole event in Exodus 14:19-31 is not simply history. It is also future history, that is, PROPHECY, not only of the nation Israel but also in type the Rapture. The Book is circular; that which was, it that which is to be repeated.

That cloud is above those on the first heaven in the earth. That is to protect us of the glory and power of God in the third heaven. Just as it was when God spoke to the nation Israel

5. Now this “pattern” was shown to Moses **“in the mount”** (Exod. 25:40). That too is an earthly historical fact of a heavenly REALITY. The universe is the shape of a pyramid, as a MOUNTAIN. At the top of the mountain, (type of the third heaven) is The Lord Jesus Christ. He is the “capstone.” **“Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes”** (Matt. 21:42). This verse is a quote from David (Psalm. 118:22). It is also mentioned in other Gospels – (Mark and Luke). It was quoted by Peter (Acts 4:11) and also in his first epistle (1 Pet. 2:7).

### Finale

Those that have fallen will not be able to enter in or “break in” on those that are saved, washed pure and forever live for eternity enjoying God’s presence. That was not the case when God first started. The Genesis account has it that He created all the heavenly host first, then laid the foundation of the earth (Job 38:-4-7; Col. 1:10-16). There was opportunity for those beings to fall and they did. After God “started over” with man (Gen. 1:26-28) those fallen beings had the opportunity to spoil things; and they did – the devil did. That most certainly will not be the case when there will be a new heavens and a new earth because God will make it so and even better that it will be IMPOSSIBLE TO “BREAK IN” OR GET THROUGH TO THOSE THAT WILL MULTIPLY THROUGHOUT ETERNITY.

**“For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie”** (Rev. 22:15).

The word **“dogs”** is referring to people (2 Pet. 2:22) and all the rest could also apply to the devil himself for he is a great sorcerer, and a whoremonger (2 Cor. 11:3; 1 John 3:12; Psa. 109:14), murderer, (he was behind it all to get Eve and Adam to commit spiritual suicide), idolator (Isa. 14:13; 2 Thess. 2:4), and he most certainly loves to lie **“Yeah, hath God said...”** (Gen. 3:1).

The true, born again believers are going to judge angels (1 Cor. 6:1-3). And just because all the heavenly host that sinned and is judged and cast into the lake of fire that does not mean that they no longer cease to exist. They WILL exist, BUT JUST IN ANOTHER PLACE. They won’t be able to get to us born-again believers or other believers of different periods of time out in eternity. It is like the principle of what was spoken of the underworld when the Lord Jesus Christ told of the rich man that went to hell, **“And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they**

**which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence” (Luke 16:26).**

**“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever” (Rev. 20:10)**

**“And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death” (Rev. 20:14).**

**“And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire” (Rev. 20:15).**

**And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life” (Rev. 21:27).**

Notice how that the Authorized Version of the King James Bible (1611) has inserted the italicized word **“whatsoever.”** What a revelation! That means it is not talking only about people, that is, whosoever, but **“whatsoever”** shall in no wise entire into the city. That would be mutants, unclean spirits, fallen angels, beasts, “dogs,” the wicked sons of God, the false prophet, the anti-Christ, etc. They will not be able to enter into the NEW HEAVENS (plural) and the new earth. That will be the third set of HEAVENS (plural) and earth. Remember the first set of heavens (plural) and earth was Genesis 1:1 to 1:2 (2 Pet. 3:5, 6). That was dealt with by the judgment of God. The second set of heavens (plural) are from Genesis 1:3 all the way to Revelation 20. Peter confirms that, **“But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men”** (2 Peter 3:7). That is the **“heavens (plural) and the earth which are now”** are going to be destroyed by God. Remember, there was no such destruction of the heavens (plural) during Noah’s flood. To mix the events of Genesis 1:2 with Noah’s flood of 2 Peter 4, 5 is a sloppy effort of Bible exegesis. Then there will be a new heavens and a new earth **“Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens (plural) and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness”** (2 Peter 3:13). Hallelujah, what a Saviour!

---

“God’s original purpose was to populate an infinite universe with a people “made in his image,” subject to Him as Almighty God. This first trial ends in Genesis 1:2 with a rebellion of these spiritual beings and a recreation and recommission for man [“made lower than the angels”] to begin the work anew. This trial ends in Genesis 3:1-13. The subsequent revelation of God is devoted to an accurate record of God Himself becoming a man to redeem a fallen creation and to absolutely INSURE that God will finish to perfection His original plan (Rev. 20-22). AMEN, SO BE IT!!”

## **Conclusion**

In conclusion the Holy Spirit has gone to great lengths to explain clearly many intertwined subjects concerning the GAP FACT such as heaven and heavens; generation and generations, all of Genesis 1:2 with Job 38 and Jeremiah 4; Lucifer, the “sons of god” the doctrine of Romans 5:12; who and what is Leviathan, the deeps, cosmology, the six days recreation based on the historical account of a prior existence of a chaotic planet, and many other fascinating subjects. As one preacher put it,

“Why fight the plain truth just to prove a narrowly held supposition of a few Christian scientists whose view is not based on the Bible itself but on the need to deny theistic evolutionists a convenient argument? It serves no purpose to twist the truth in order to prove the truth. The Bible is an exciting and thrilling book, speaking plainly to those who have no outside agenda.”

That outside agenda is the overanxious attempt by the ‘creationists’ and crowd to prove dinosaurs or reject atheistic evolution (Tabb and crowd) at the expense of sound Bible doctrine. There is more scriptural evidence for the GAP FACT – much more than the modern fundamentalists even know of. Blindness comes from not searching all the counsel of God. *Scripturally*, there is not worthy challenge to the GAP FACT.

Believe the Book and it will effectually work in you (1 Thess. 2:13). Make the proper *divisions* (2 Tim. 2:15) where necessary (Gen. 1:2, 4, etc.). Compare verses (1 Cor. 2:13) and note the *repetitions* throughout the Bible (Isa. 28:10, 13). Be *patient* while studying the scriptures (Rom. 15:4). Don’t let anybody steal words out of your heart, mind and mouth, while holding a King James Bible in your hands. **“Hold fast the form of sound words...”** (2 Tim. 1:13), and **“Neither give place to the devil”** (Eph. 4:27) even if he comes through ‘conservative’ Christianity. **“For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;”** (Tim. 4:3).

Hovind and company, concerning this subject are WRONG and the BIBLE is RIGHT!